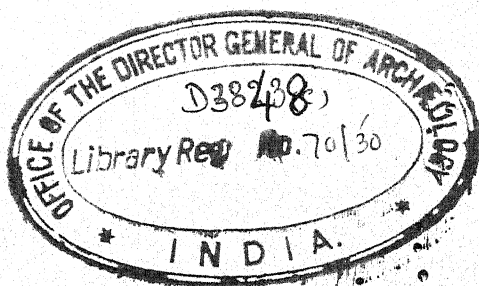


CONTRIBUTIONS TO THE HISTORY OF
THE HINDU REVENUE SYSTEM





CONTRIBUTIONS TO THE HISTORY OF THE HINDU REVENUE SYSTEM

BY

U. N. GHOSHAL, M.A., PH.D.,

PROFESSOR OF HISTORY, PRESIDENCY COLLEGE, CALCUTTA; LECTURER IN THE
DEPARTMENTS OF HISTORY AND ECONOMICS, CALCUTTA UNIVERSITY;

AUTHOR OF '*A History of Hindu Political Theories,*'

'Ancient Indian Culture in Afghanistan,' etc.

PUBLISHED BY THE
UNIVERSITY OF CALCUTTA

1929

PRINTED BY BHUPENDRALAL BANERJEE
AT THE CALCUTTA UNIVERSITY PRESS, SENATE HOUSE, CALCUTTA.

Reg. No. 485B, Dec. 1929—E.

To
MY PARENTS



*Rājñah koṣabalam mūlaṃ koṣamūlam punarbalam |
tanmūlaṃ sarvadharmāṇāṃ dharmamūlāḥ punaḥ prajāḥ ||*

Mahābhārata, XII, 130.35.

("The treasury and the army are the root of kings, the treasury again is the root of the army, the army is the root of all duties, duties again are the root of the subjects.")

Koṣamūlo hi rājeti pravādaḥ sārvalaukikaḥ.

Kāmandakiya Nītisāra, XXI, 33.

("It is a universal saying that the treasury is the root of kings.")

*Koṣo hi bhūpatināṃ jīvitam na prāṇāḥ.....koṣo
rājetyuchyate na bhūpatināṃ śarīram.*

Nītivākyaṃṛtam, XXI, 5-7.

("Not their own existence, but the treasury, in sooth, is the life of kings.....Not the physical body of kings, but the treasury is declared to be the king.")



1998, 1999, 2000, 2001, 2002, 2003, 2004, 2005, 2006, 2007, 2008, 2009, 2010, 2011, 2012, 2013, 2014, 2015, 2016, 2017, 2018, 2019, 2020, 2021, 2022, 2023, 2024, 2025, 2026, 2027, 2028, 2029, 2030, 2031, 2032, 2033, 2034, 2035, 2036, 2037, 2038, 2039, 2040, 2041, 2042, 2043, 2044, 2045, 2046, 2047, 2048, 2049, 2050, 2051, 2052, 2053, 2054, 2055, 2056, 2057, 2058, 2059, 2060, 2061, 2062, 2063, 2064, 2065, 2066, 2067, 2068, 2069, 2070, 2071, 2072, 2073, 2074, 2075, 2076, 2077, 2078, 2079, 2080, 2081, 2082, 2083, 2084, 2085, 2086, 2087, 2088, 2089, 2090, 2091, 2092, 2093, 2094, 2095, 2096, 2097, 2098, 2099, 2100, 2101, 2102, 2103, 2104, 2105, 2106, 2107, 2108, 2109, 2110, 2111, 2112, 2113, 2114, 2115, 2116, 2117, 2118, 2119, 2120, 2121, 2122, 2123, 2124, 2125, 2126, 2127, 2128, 2129, 2130, 2131, 2132, 2133, 2134, 2135, 2136, 2137, 2138, 2139, 2140, 2141, 2142, 2143, 2144, 2145, 2146, 2147, 2148, 2149, 2150, 2151, 2152, 2153, 2154, 2155, 2156, 2157, 2158, 2159, 2160, 2161, 2162, 2163, 2164, 2165, 2166, 2167, 2168, 2169, 2170, 2171, 2172, 2173, 2174, 2175, 2176, 2177, 2178, 2179, 2180, 2181, 2182, 2183, 2184, 2185, 2186, 2187, 2188, 2189, 2190, 2191, 2192, 2193, 2194, 2195, 2196, 2197, 2198, 2199, 2200, 2201, 2202, 2203, 2204, 2205, 2206, 2207, 2208, 2209, 2210, 2211, 2212, 2213, 2214, 2215, 2216, 2217, 2218, 2219, 2220, 2221, 2222, 2223, 2224, 2225, 2226, 2227, 2228, 2229, 2230, 2231, 2232, 2233, 2234, 2235, 2236, 2237, 2238, 2239, 2240, 2241, 2242, 2243, 2244, 2245, 2246, 2247, 2248, 2249, 2250, 2251, 2252, 2253, 2254, 2255, 2256, 2257, 2258, 2259, 2260, 2261, 2262, 2263, 2264, 2265, 2266, 2267, 2268, 2269, 2270, 2271, 2272, 2273, 2274, 2275, 2276, 2277, 2278, 2279, 2280, 2281, 2282, 2283, 2284, 2285, 2286, 2287, 2288, 2289, 2290, 2291, 2292, 2293, 2294, 2295, 2296, 2297, 2298, 2299, 2300, 2301, 2302, 2303, 2304, 2305, 2306, 2307, 2308, 2309, 2310, 2311, 2312, 2313, 2314, 2315, 2316, 2317, 2318, 2319, 2320, 2321, 2322, 2323, 2324, 2325, 2326, 2327, 2328, 2329, 2330, 2331, 2332, 2333, 2334, 2335, 2336, 2337, 2338, 2339, 2340, 2341, 2342, 2343, 2344, 2345, 2346, 2347, 2348, 2349, 2350, 2351, 2352, 2353, 2354, 2355, 2356, 2357, 2358, 2359, 2360, 2361, 2362, 2363, 2364, 2365, 2366, 2367, 2368, 2369, 2370, 2371, 2372, 2373, 2374, 2375, 2376, 2377, 2378, 2379, 2380, 2381, 2382, 2383, 2384, 2385, 2386, 2387, 2388, 2389, 2390, 2391, 2392, 2393, 2394, 2395, 2396, 2397, 2398, 2399, 2400, 2401, 2402, 2403, 2404, 2405, 2406, 2407, 2408, 2409, 2410, 2411, 2412, 2413, 2414, 2415, 2416, 2417, 2418, 2419, 2420, 2421, 2422, 2423, 2424, 2425, 2426, 2427, 2428, 2429, 2430, 2431, 2432, 2433, 2434, 2435, 2436, 2437, 2438, 2439, 2440, 2441, 2442, 2443, 2444, 2445, 2446, 2447, 2448, 2449, 2450, 2451, 2452, 2453, 2454, 2455, 2456, 2457, 2458, 2459, 2460, 2461, 2462, 2463, 2464, 2465, 2466, 2467, 2468, 2469, 2470, 2471, 2472, 2473, 2474, 2475, 2476, 2477, 2478, 2479, 2480, 2481, 2482, 2483, 2484, 2485, 2486, 2487, 2488, 2489, 2490, 2491, 2492, 2493, 2494, 2495, 2496, 2497, 2498, 2499, 2500, 2501, 2502, 2503, 2504, 2505, 2506, 2507, 2508, 2509, 2510, 2511, 2512, 2513, 2514, 2515, 2516, 2517, 2518, 2519, 2520, 2521, 2522, 2523, 2524, 2525, 2526, 2527, 2528, 2529, 2530, 2531, 2532, 2533, 2534, 2535, 2536, 2537, 2538, 2539, 2540, 2541, 2542, 2543, 2544, 2545, 2546, 2547, 2548, 2549, 2550, 2551, 2552, 2553, 2554, 2555, 2556, 2557, 2558, 2559, 2560, 2561, 2562, 2563, 2564, 2565, 2566, 2567, 2568, 2569, 2570, 2571, 2572, 2573, 2574, 2575, 2576, 2577, 2578, 2579, 2580, 2581, 2582, 2583, 2584, 2585, 2586, 2587, 2588, 2589, 2590, 2591, 2592, 2593, 2594, 2595, 2596, 2597, 2598, 2599, 2600, 2601, 2602, 2603, 2604, 2605, 2606, 2607, 2608, 2609, 2610, 2611, 2612, 2613, 2614, 2615, 2616, 2617, 2618, 2619, 2620, 2621, 2622, 2623, 2624, 2625, 2626, 2627, 2628, 2629, 2630, 2631, 2632, 2633, 2634, 2635, 2636, 2637, 2638, 2639, 2640, 2641, 2642, 2643, 2644, 2645, 2646, 2647, 2648, 2649, 2650, 2651, 2652, 2653, 2654, 2655, 2656, 2657, 2658, 2659, 2660, 2661, 2662, 2663, 2664, 2665, 2666, 2667, 2668, 2669, 2670, 2671, 2672, 2673, 2674, 2675, 2676, 2677, 2678, 2679, 26

the 1990s, the number of people in the world who are under 15 years of age is expected to increase from 1.1 billion to 1.5 billion. The number of people aged 65 and over is expected to increase from 200 million to 400 million. The number of people aged 15 and over is expected to increase from 3.5 billion to 4.5 billion. The number of people aged 15 and over is expected to increase from 3.5 billion to 4.5 billion. The number of people aged 15 and over is expected to increase from 3.5 billion to 4.5 billion.

PREFACE

The history of institutions, it has been observed by an eminent English historian of the last generation, affords little of the romantic incident or of the picturesque grouping that constitutes the charm of History in general, and holds out small temptation to the mind that requires to be tempted to the study of truth. In so far as the institutions of Ancient India are concerned, further difficulties arise not only from the unfamiliarity of the subject-matter, but also from the fact that the evidence, such as it is, is often fragmentary in the extreme, and is marked by obscurities and technicalities of a pronounced character. Nevertheless a proper consideration of this subject appears to be of paramount importance not only for forming a just and balanced estimate of the Ancient Indian civilisation on its material plane, but also for tracing many of the institutions of Mediaeval and even of Modern India to their roots in the past.

The present work is an attempt to set forth, within the limits stated hereafter, a complete account of the origin and development of the Ancient Indian revenue system, based upon an exhaustive and critical study of the relevant data. It has been accordingly the author's endeavour to arrange the facts drawn from the varied sources, as far as possible, in their chronological sequence. This aim has not been lost sight of, even where the arrangement has been made, as in dealing with the material of the Law-Books and the works on Polity, broadly on topical lines. It has thus been possible

often to trace, under the different heads of revenue, the sequence of development from crude to relatively advanced methods. On the other hand, the institutions of later times have been freely drawn upon when they were thought to be capable of throwing light upon the revenue arrangements of the early period. Copious use has also been made, notwithstanding the well-known uncertainties of Hindu literary chronology, of references in the general literature which serve to corroborate or to supplement the evidence of the purely literary records.

Apart from the difficulty of interpreting sundry obscure texts and the less numerous, but almost equally enigmatical, accounts of the foreign observers, the author's principal concern has been to find out the precise meanings of the large array of technical terms. In some instances, as notably in the case of *hiranya* and *choravarjjam*, the current interpretations, however sanctified by usage, do not appear to him to bear the test of scrutiny, and he has suggested more probable explanations. Other terms, such as *bhāga*, *bali* and *kara*, have been shown to have borne a multiplicity of meanings, the connotation varying according to different authorities or even within the range of the same authorities.

The present volume is divided into four Parts or Sections of unequal length. Part I deals with the period of the oldest literary monuments of the Indian people, that of the Vedic Samhitās and the Brāhmaṇas. It was then, as has been shown below, that the foundations were laid for the systematic revenue arrangements of later times. The rich store of materials gathered in the literature of Arthaśāstra and Nītiśāstra, Smṛtis, Epics and Purāṇas, the Smṛti commentaries and Digests forms the subject-matter of Part II. Here it has been sought, after a preliminary consideration of the ideas of the authorities concerned regarding the general character of Public Finance and the methods and principles of taxation, to arrange the sources of public revenue roughly

in accordance with the scheme of classification in the Arthaśāstra. To this have been added supplementary chapters on the topics of emergency revenue, untaxable classes and the taxable minimum as well as revenue administration, while a brief account of the important branch of Public Expenditure has been given in the form of an Appendix. In Part III an attempt is made to reconstruct, mainly with the aid of the contemporary inscriptions, the revenue history of Northern India during a period of nearly fifteen centuries intervening between the rise of the Maurya Empire and the catastrophe of the Muhammadan conquest. It has not been found possible, for reasons stated in the sequel, to undertake in this connexion a similar task for the Deccan and Southern India. In Part IV it has been attempted, in the light of the foregoing survey of historical data as well as the accounts of the literary works, to sum up the leading characteristics and tendencies of the Hindu system, and above all to indicate its rightful place in relation to other systems of ancient and mediaeval times. Finally, a glossary of fiscal terms has been given at the end for facility of reference.

Although a general account of the branch of Ancient Indian land-revenue has been given in the present volume, a fuller consideration of this absorbing topic with its connected problem of ownership of the soil, has been reserved for a course of lectures which the author proposes to deliver under the terms of his appointment as Reader of the Calcutta University during the current session.

The system of transliteration adopted in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland has been followed in this work with the slight substitution of *cha* for *ca*. In connexion with the now famous work called the Arthaśāstra, the name Kauṭilya has been adhered to, as its suggested emendation into Kauṭalya, while meeting with the approval of some scholars, has not been accepted by others.

The author takes this opportunity to convey his sincere thanks to the authorities of the Calcutta University for their kindness in undertaking the publication of the present work. His grateful acknowledgments are also due to Mr. J. C. Chakravorti, M.A., Assistant Registrar of the University, for the personal interest he has taken in pushing it through the Press.

CONTENTS

PART I

THE BEGINNINGS OF THE SYSTEM	Page 1
------------------------------	-----	-----	-----------

PART II

THE SYSTEM AS REFLECTED IN THE LITERATURE OF LAW AND POLITY

CHAPTER I

Introductory	13
--------------	-----	-----	-----	----

CHAPTER II

The sources of revenue : the land-revenue and associated charges on land	25
---	-----	-----	-----	----

CHAPTER III

The sources of revenue (<i>continued</i>) : tolls, transit duties, customs and the like	68
--	-----	-----	-----	----

CHAPTER IV

The sources of revenue (<i>continued</i>) : income from the State establishments and miscellaneous receipts from the city	90
---	-----	-----	-----	----

CHAPTER V

	Page
The sources of revenue (<i>concluded</i>): income from mines, gardens, forests, and herds—miscellaneous receipts of the king 	104

CHAPTER VI

Emergency revenue 	125
---	-----

CHAPTER VII

Classes exempted from taxation—untaxable property ...	136
---	-----

CHAPTER VIII

Revenue administration 	142
--	-----

Appendix

THE BRANCHES OF STATE EXPENDITURE 	154
---	-----

PART III

A HISTORICAL ACCOUNT OF THE REVENUE SYSTEM IN
NORTHERN INDIA—C. 300 B.C. TO 1200 A.C.

CHAPTER I

✓ Introductory : The Maurya period 	165
--	-----

CHAPTER II

The Scythian period 	186
---	-----

CHAPTER III

The Gupta period 	190
--	-----

CHAPTER IV

The Epoch of Harṣavardhana	Page 223
--------------------------------	-----	-----	-------------

CHAPTER V

The Early Mediaeval ("Rajput") period	234
---	-----	-----	-----

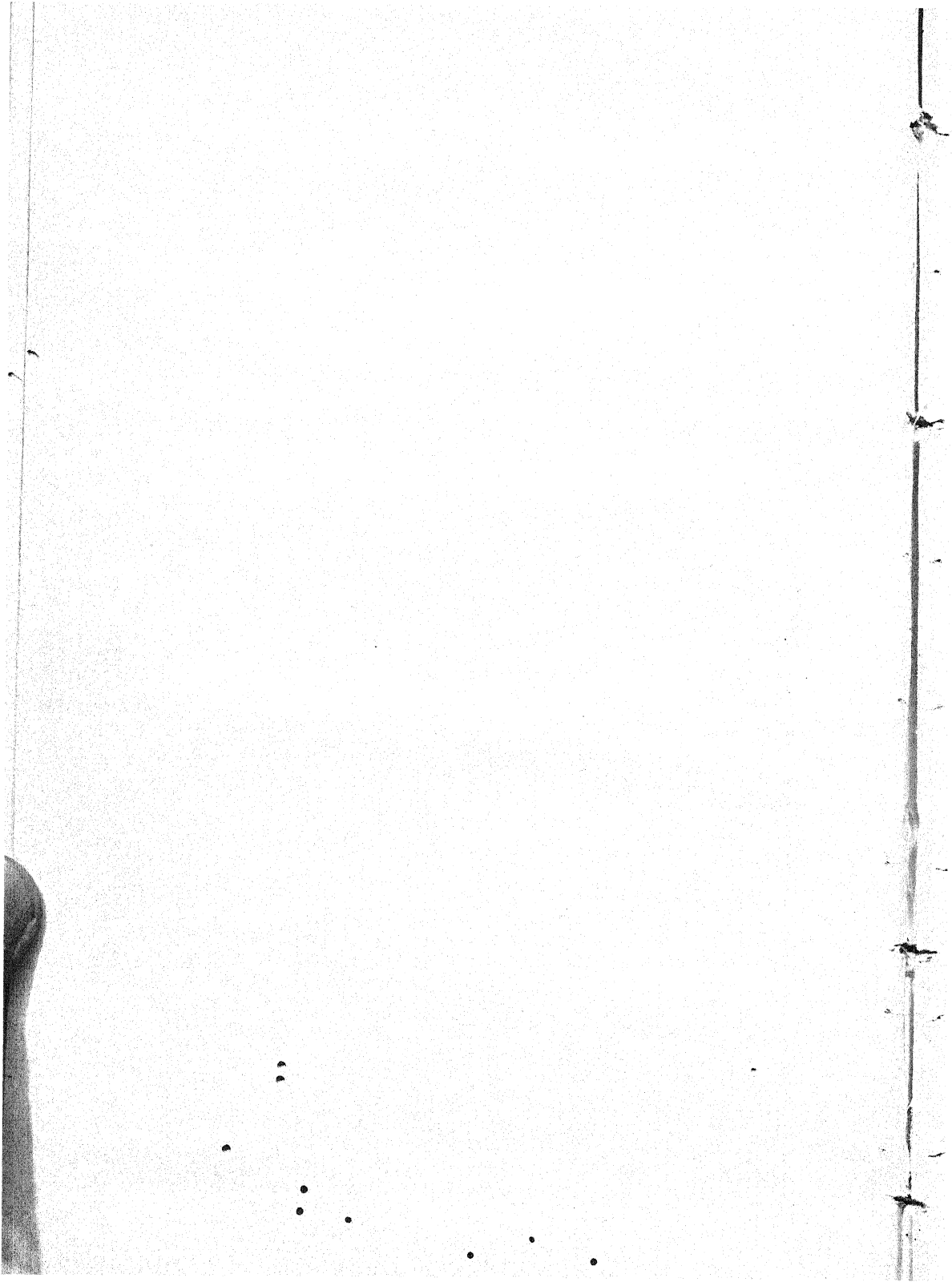
PART IV

SUMMARY AND CONCLUSION ...	...	...	271
Glossary of fiscal terms ...	...	...	289
Index ...	...	...	301



PART I

THE BEGINNINGS OF THE SYSTEM



THE PERIOD OF THE VEDIC SAMHITĀS AND BRĀHMAṆAS

The oldest notices of the social and political conditions of the Indian people go back to the collection of hymns and prayers called the Ṛgveda Samhitā which is usually assigned to 1200 B.C. Of the races of alien stock that occupied the country before the migration of the Indo-Aryans, the Dravidians at any rate developed an advanced civilization at an early period of their history. But the earliest records of their civilization which are embodied in the Tamil classical literature arose many centuries after the compilation of the Ṛgveda. With regard to the other races preceding the Indo-Aryan occupation of the country, the Kolarians, the Tibeto-Burmans and so forth, it is not too much to say that the scientific investigation of their institutions has begun only just now. In these circumstances the historian of ancient Indian administration is bound to begin his account with the oldest literary monument of the Indo-Aryans, namely, the Samhitā of the Ṛgveda.

/ The Indo-Aryan tribes in the period of the Ṛgveda are already found to be in possession of a kind of political organisation, however undeveloped it might be, under the rule of the king (*rājan*) who was assisted by the tribal assembly (*sabhā* or *samiti*). In consonance with this fact we find that the king is regarded as deriving his revenues, at least in part, from the contributions of his subjects which are known by the

technical title of *bali*. Thus a hymn of the *R̥gveda*¹ relating to the king's consecration contains the poet's prayer that Indra might make the subjects (*viśas*) pay *bali* to the king. This utterance, it has been suggested,² would be meaningless if the *bali* were a legally fixed income instead of a voluntary payment. On the other hand, it has been argued³ that since the Vedic Indians were essentially a body of conquering invaders, a mere system of voluntary gifts by the subjects would be extremely improbable in their case. What seems most likely, judging from the natural course of development among primitive societies,⁴ is that the *bali* which was at first voluntary in character afterwards developed into a compulsory payment. Whether the *bali* was levied, as in later times, entirely upon the agricultural produce, it is not possible to state with certainty from the evidence of the *R̥gveda*, but the balance of probability seems to be in favour of this supposition. Another source of the king's revenue that is hinted at in the *R̥gveda* period consisted of tribute from the conquered communities who might conceivably be either of Aryan or non-Aryan stock. Thus in one hymn addressed to Agni⁵ the poet while magnifying the god's achievements mentions that he forced the people to pay *bali* to King Nahuṣa.⁶

¹ X, 173.6. I append below two translations of the relevant part of this hymn: 'Dann möge Indra zinsbar dir die Stämme machen alle-sammt' (Grassmann, *R̥gveda*, II, 428); 'So soll denn Indra dir allein tributpflichtig die Stämme machen' (Ludwig, *Der R̥gveda*, II, 558).

² Zimmer, *Altindisches Leben*, 166.

³ *Vedic Index*, s.v. *bali*.

⁴ Cf. Seligman, *Essays in Taxation*, 9th ed., pp. 2-3.

⁵ VII, 6.5.

⁶ The relevant extract is given in two different translations as follows:—

'Der hat, sie niederdrückend, des Nahus stämme, der jugendliche Agni, durch seine sige tributpflichtig gemacht' (Ludwig, I, 414); 'Der Warf die Gaue der Nahus nieder, er der ewig junge Agni und machte sie mit Gewalt zinspflichtig' (Zimmer, 166).

illa another hymn addressed to Indra¹ we are told in connection with a certain victory won by the gods that three specified countries paid him a horse's head as *bali*.² These passages are generally taken to refer to the exaction of tribute from conquered enemies by the king.³

The Atharvaveda is well acquainted with the term *bali* as the designation of a contribution paid by the people to the king. In one of its hymns which was used at the ceremony of royal inauguration,⁴ we read, 'Unto thee let thy fellows come, calling [thee]; Agni shall go along as speedy messenger; let the wives, the sons, be well-willing; thou, formidable, shalt see arrive much tribute.'⁵ This passage would seem to imply that the *bali* which is translated above as tribute was already regarded as a compulsory contribution of the subjects. In another place⁶ the Atharvaveda hints at a certain portion of the property of the subjects as forming the king's due and introduces a new revenue term in place of the usual *bali*. This hymn which is concerned with the offering of a white-footed sheep at certain sacrifices begins thus, 'What the kings share among themselves—the sixteenth of what is offered and bestowed—yon assessors of Yama; from that the white-footed sheep given (as) ancestral offering releases.' Further on we read, 'He who gives a white-footed sheep commensurate with (his) world, he ascends unto the firmament, where a tax

¹ VII, 18.19.

² The relevant portion is translated as follows:—

'Die Adscha's dann, die Sigrū's und die Jakschu's entrichten als Zoll der Pferde Häupter' (Grassmann, I, 317); 'Die Aja, die Sigrū und die Yaksu (Yadu?) brachten pferdehäupter (pferde?) als tribut' (Ludwig II, 655); 'Die Aja, Sigrū, Yakshu brachten Pferdehäupter als Tribut dar' (Zimmer, 166, 167).

³ Cf. Vedic Index, *loc. cit.*

⁴ III, 4.

⁵ Whitney's tr., H. O. S., Vol. VII, p. 89.

⁶ III, 29.

is not paid by a weak man for a stronger.'¹ In the above the term translated as tax is in the original *śulka* which is the amended reading² of the faulty *śukla*, and the purport of the whole passage is that the sacrificer by offering the sheep is released from payment that would be otherwise due to Yama's councillors on his admission into the other world.³ In so far as the specific rate of $\frac{1}{16}$ is concerned it is undoubtedly much less than the usual proportion of $\frac{1}{6}$ of the produce claimed for the king in later times, but it at any rate points to a certain proportion of the property of the subjects as payable to the king for revenue.⁴ A third passage of the Atharva-veda⁵ seems to refer to a number of distinct sources from which the king derived his revenue. There we read in course of a hymn addressed to the god Indra in connection with the ceremony of the royal consecration, 'Portion thou this man in village, in horses, in kine : unportion that man who is his enemy : let this king be the summit of authorities ; O Indra, make every foe subject to him.'⁶ This seems to suggest that the king's revenue was already derived from a share of the agricultural produce and a contribution in cattle from the

¹ Whitney's tr., *ibid*, p. 136.

² First suggested by Muir (*Old Sanskrit Texts*, Vol.V, p. 310) and afterwards adopted by Whitney on the authority of the reading in S. P. Pandit's edition.

³ Cf. the significant title 'Abfindung mit den Zoll in Jenseits' which Weber (*Ind. St.*, XVII, 302) gives to this hymn. As Weber points out, the words in the latter verse 'where no tax is paid,' etc., amount to a certain contradiction with the former verse where the sheep are mentioned as the redemption for the tax.

⁴ The term *śulka* is here better translated as tax by Whitney than as toll by Weber. The use of *śulka* in this wider non-technical sense is known, e.g., to the Kāśikā commentary on Pāṇini (V, 1. 47) which is here followed by the sub-commentaries, the Bālamānoramā and the Padamāñjarī.

⁵ IV, 22. ~

⁶ Whitney's tr., *ibid*, p. 188.

villages corresponding respectively to the later *bhāga* or *bali* and the tax on cattle. In the course of the same hymn we read, 'Of lion-aspect, do thou devour all the clans; of tiger-aspect, do thou beat down the foes; sole chief, having Indra as companion, having conquered, seize thou on the enjoyments of them that play the foe.' In the striking phrase declaring the king to be the devourer of his people we may perhaps discover fresh evidence showing that the contributions of the subjects had now unequivocally become compulsory in their character.

With the period of the Yajus Samhitās and the Brāhmaṇas we reach a fresh stage in the development of the Indo-Aryan political organisation. This is marked by a striking increase in the authority of the king, of which the emergence of the great ceremonies of royal and imperial consecration was the outward expression. Among the contributory causes that led to this result must no doubt be principally mentioned the expansion of the Indo-Aryans over the greater part of Northern India lying between the Himalayas and the Vindhya mountains. Whatever that might be, the Brāhmaṇas habitually characterise the king, or the Kṣatriya as the devourer of his folk. It would thus appear that compulsory contributions of the subjects had now become the normal rule of existence in the Indo-Aryan polity. More specifically the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa in an oft-quoted passage ¹ describes the Vaiśya 'as paying *bali* to another, to be eaten by another, to be oppressed at will.' On the other hand the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa declares more than once ² that while everything here is to be food (*ādya*) for the king, the Brāhmaṇa is not to be fed upon (*anādya*), for he has Soma for his king. Evidently then the Brāhmaṇas had already begun to assert their claims for exemption from the revenue,

¹ VII, 29.

² *Ibid*, V, 3. 3.12; 4. 2. 3.

while the Vaiśyas who formed the vast bulk of the agricultural population were conceived as bearing the burden of taxation. In another place ¹ the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa uses the simile of an inferior bringing *bali* to his superior and of a man of the people bringing *bali* to the king. This shows that the *bali* had now become the definite mark of the relation between the king and his subjects. Other passages of the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa convey in the usual guise of symbolic interpretation of the sacrificial ritual the priestly author's sense of the importance of the king's receiving the *bali* from his subjects as well as from his conquered enemies. Thus we are told in one place ² that if the royal sacrificer were to offer butter with the *upabhṛt*, his "subjects would assuredly become separated from him, nor would there be either an eater or what is to be eaten," but when the sacrificer offers the butter with the *juhū*, "thereby the people pay tribute to the Kṣatriya,..... thereby the Kṣatriya, whenever he likes says, 'Hullo, Vaiśya, just bring to me what thou hast stored away.'"³ In another passage a certain rite requiring the use of both the *upabhṛt* and the *juhū* is interpreted to mean that the priest thereby makes the spiteful enemy pay tribute to the sacrificer and the one that is to be consumed pay tribute to the consumer. Above all the Taittiriya Brāhmaṇa ⁴ mentions a rite called *vighana* ('destroyer of obstacles') by the performance of which Indra formerly overcame the hostility of the Maruts who were his subjects. If the Kṣatriya or the king, we are told, performs this rite, he is relieved from all hostilities in the sense that his subjects bring *bali* to him.

¹ XI, 2.6. 14. ⁵

² I, 3. 2. 15.

³ Eggeling's tr., S. B. E., Vol. XII, p. 82. The *upabhṛt* and the *juhū* are two kinds of wooden spoons used in the sacrifices.

⁴ II, 7. 18.

Let us next enquire what indications of a machinery of revenue administration can be traced in the Vedic Samhitās and the Brāhmaṇas. The Pañchavimśa Brāhmaṇa mentions in one place¹ a list of eight *vīras* ('heroes') constituting the king's *entourage* and supporters, among whom is included an officer called the *Samgrahītr*. The Yajus Samhitās and the Brāhmaṇas describe a similar list of *ratnins* ('jewels') including in their number not only the *Samgrahītr* but also the *Bhāgadugha*.² As regards the latter term Sāyaṇa, the famous commentator, explains it in some places in the sense of 'one who collects the king's $\frac{1}{8}$ share from the subjects and makes it over to the king.' But elsewhere Sāyaṇa gives for *Bhāgadugha* the meaning of carver of food. In a similar manner he takes *Samgrahītr* to mean either the Superintendent of the Treasury (*kośādhyakṣa*) or the charioteer.³ If the first alternative interpretations of *Bhāgadugha* and *Samgrahītr* by Sāyaṇa could be accepted, it would furnish a conclusive proof of the existence of regular officers for collecting the king's dues and receiving the same into the treasury such as the *samāhartā* and the *kośādhyakṣa* of the Arthaśāstra in later times. It would also point to the use of *bhāga* as a technical revenue-term even at this early period. But Sāyaṇa's own doubtful rendering of these terms proves the absence of a continuous tradition regarding their meaning down to his time, and the terms, therefore, must remain for us shrouded in mystery.

To sum up the results of the preceding survey, it appears that the Indo-Aryan polity in the early Vedic period was

¹ XIX, 1. 4.

² T. S., I, 8. 9. 2; Taitt. Br., I, 7.3.5; Sat. Br., V, 3.1. 1 ff.; Maitr. Sam., II, 6.5; Kāth. Sam., XV, 4; etc.

³ A later commr. Bhāskaramiśra understands *samgrahītr* to mean superintendent of the king's storehouse (*bhāṇḍāgārika*) and *bhāgadugha* as (royal) cook or superintendent of the cowherds (Taitt. Br. with comm. of Bhaṭṭabhāskaramiśra, Aṣṭaka I, p. 372 (Mysore ed., 1908-21).

sufficiently organised to make it possible for the king to collect regular taxes (usually called *bali*) from the subjects. These taxes apparently consisted of contributions of the agricultural produce and of the stock of cattle paid by the villagers at certain specific rates. Another branch of the king's revenue was derived from the tribute (likewise known by the title of *bali*) which was exacted by the king from his conquered enemies. For the realisation of these revenues some form of organisation was undoubtedly in existence, but we are left in the dark regarding its specific character owing to the obscurity of our authorities on this particular point.

PART II

THE SYSTEM AS REFLECTED IN THE LITERATURE
OF LAW AND POLITY

CHAPTER I

INTRODUCTORY

For the period immediately following the Vedic Samhitās and the Brāhmaṇas our sources consist principally of the work on the Art of Government (Arthaśāstra) attributed to Kautilya and the literature of Law-books (Smṛtis). In the sections on Law and Polity comprised in these works is embodied a mass of rules and principles relating to various branches of royal revenue and expenditure as well as the forms and methods of revenue administration which together constitute the most systematic account of Hindu public finance that has come down to us. Between the legal material of the Arthaśāstra on the one hand and the Law-books (specially the later ones) on the other, the resemblance is so close as to imply the derivation of the one from the other or possibly of both from a common source, while the political material though not bearing such a close similarity indicates an agreement at least as regards the general principles.¹ We have then in the present case to deal not with two distinct lines of evidence, but rather with two allied branches of a common system. The roots of this system must ultimately be traced to the observations of actual forms of State and bodies of law in existence in ancient times, while the mutual differences may possibly have their basis in different geographical

¹ Cf. Jolly, ZDMG, Vols. 67, p. 49 ff., and 68, p. 354 ff.; Jolly-Schmidt, Arthaśāstra ed., Introd., pp. 12-19; Winternitz, Sir Asutosh Mookerjee Mem. Vol., pp. 25-48.

environments or different types of social organisation. To the data derived from the works on Law and Polity have to be added the references in the general literature to the heads of revenue and their forms of administration as well as their modern survivals which tend not only to elucidate and supplement the older evidence, but also to illustrate the extent to which the traditional system prevailed in actual practice. Lastly, mention may be made of the notices in the Niti-digests and the commentaries on the Law-books, which, though much later in date than the Arthaśāstra and Smṛtis, form the natural supplement of the treatises we are now considering.

We have mentioned above as a general characteristic of the financial ideas of our present authorities that they tend to assume the character of a system. Let us illustrate this point in some detail. We notice in the first place that Politics (*dandanīti*) is now one of the recognised branches of knowledge, its place in the list of 'sciences' (*vidyās*) being keenly debated by rival schools of Arthaśāstra, while the Mahābhārata tradition ascribes its origin to the supreme Creator of the universe.¹ In accordance with this fact we have here for the first time classified lists of sources of the king's revenue together with the customary rates of each. What is of more importance, these authorities for the first time consciously formulate general rules or maxims of taxation as well as the principles of application of special taxes which, as we shall presently see, surpass the achievements of classical antiquity and tend to approach the ideas of European thinkers in the 18th and early 19th centuries.

While the rules and principles of revenue and expenditure in our present works occur either explicitly (as in the Arthaśāstra) or implicitly (as in the Smṛtis and other works) as part and parcel of the art of statecraft or government, a

¹ For references see *Hindu Political Theories*, 2nd ed., pp. 45-49, 129.

passage of Kauṭilya¹ would seem to bring them into relation with what may be called the science of wealth or economics. There we are told that *vārttā* (that is the technical science dealing with agriculture, cattle-breeding and trade) is useful in as much as it produces (the contributions in) grains, cattle, cash, raw materials and forced labour; it is by means of *vārttā* through the treasury and the army that the king brings under his control his own and his enemies' partisans. Now cattle and the like are, as we shall see presently, well-known items of the king's revenue, while the internal as well as external security is doubtless one of the most important branches of the king's expenditure. It is, moreover, permissible to hold that these heads of the king's revenue and expenditure are meant not to be exhaustive but to be illustrative. From this it would follow that the theory of finance is in the present instance sought to be based upon the science of wealth.

Turning to the ideas of our authors on the subject of the king's revenue we notice at the outset that they attach a high degree of importance to the State treasure (*kośa*). According to Kāmandaka² it is a universal maxim that the *kośa* is the root of the kings. The Nītivākyaṃṛitam,³ a late work on Polity but breathing throughout the spirit of the Arthaśāstra, declares in picturesque language that the *kośa* and not the life of the king is his subsistence, and again, that the *kośa* and not the physical body of the king is said to be the real king. Above all the *kośa* is included in the Arthaśāstra along with the king, the minister, the ally, the fortified city, the realm, and the army in a list of seven constituent limbs of the State or kingdom. This famous list is accepted in the later Smṛti and Nīti works as well as the standard lexicons as a fundamental

¹ I, 4: *Vārttā dhānyapaśuhiranyaviṣṭīpradānādaupakārikī. tayā svapakṣam parapakṣaṇca vaśīkaroti kośadanḍābhyām.*

² XXI, 33.

³ XXI, 5. 7.

category of political thought.¹ Of the seven limbs, the *kośa* and the army, again, are frequently joined together in the concepts and categories of the Hindu political thinkers. The Arthaśāstra, *e. g.*, mentions² a category of three "powers" of the king consisting of the royal energy (*utsāha*), strength (*prabhāva*) and counsel (*mantra*), which Kauṭilya defines as comprising respectively the strength of heroic valour, that of the army and treasury, and that of knowledge. This list like the preceding one goes back to the period of the early Arthaśāstra authors and becomes in later times a commonplace of political thought. It evidently signifies that the state treasure and the army are the material basis of the strength of States.

Some further ideas of the authors of the Arthaśāstra on these points are illustrated by Kauṭilya's quotation³ of a discussion regarding the relative seriousness of the calamitous state (*vyasana*) of the seven constituent limbs of the kingdom. Thus it is argued by one authority in justifying his preference of the treasure to the fortified city that the repair and security of forts depend upon the treasure. Kauṭilya in rejecting this view states that the treasure and other things depend upon the fort in the absence of which they fall into the enemies' hands. Another authority in justifying his preference of the army to the treasury argues that the treasury is sure to be lost if the army is non-existent, while if the treasury does not exist the army can be collected together by means of raw materials, grants of land and license to plunder the enemies' country. Kauṭilya's argument in rejecting this opinion sums up the mature Arthaśāstra view of the relative importance of the army and the treasure. The treasure, Kauṭilya says,

2

¹ Kauṭ., VIII, 1; Manu, IX, 294; Vi., III, 353; Yāj., I, 3; Kām., VII, 1-2.

² VI, 2.

³ VIII, 1.

is the source of the army ; it accomplishes all enterprises and is the root of virtue and pleasure : according to the conditions of time and place either the army or the treasure becomes dominant, but while the army is the means of acquiring and preserving the treasure, the latter is the means of acquiring and preserving both itself and the army. With this may be compared the view of Kauṭilya in another context¹ that the army exists because of the treasure, while the State territory of which the treasure is the ornament is won by means of the treasure and the army. We may conclude this point by quoting from Kāmandaka² his list of uses of the *kośa* which, according to him, comprises the support of servants, internal security, the repair of forts, the building of dikes, trading, the attainment of virtue, pleasure and wealth, and the like.

One fundamental conception of our present authorities is that taxes are the king's dues for the service of protection,—a view practically identical with the fashionable doctrine of 17th and 18th century Europe, namely, that taxes are the price paid for the services of the public authorities.³ Thus Gaut.⁴ justifies the king's levy of taxes on the ground that he is charged with the duty of protecting his subjects. According to Vas.⁵ the king who rules his subjects justly shall take one-sixth of the crops. Baudh.⁶ enjoins the king to protect his subjects with the sixth part as his pay.⁷ Viṣṇu⁸ while laying down his rules for the collection of taxes mentions

¹ II, 12.

² XXI, 31-33.

³ Cf. Bastable, *Public Finance*, 3rd ed., p. 266.

⁴ X, 27.

⁵ I, 42.

⁶ I, 10. 18. 1.

⁷ The commentator Govindasvāmin puts the meaning in a clearer light by explaining 'bhṛtaḥ' in the original as the receiver of wages (*vetanam*).

⁸ III, 28.

that the king shares in one-sixth of the spiritual merit as well as demerit of his subjects. Nār.¹ declares the king's revenue (*balī*) to be his fee for the protection of his subjects. Even the theory of the king's ownership of the soil in Manu has to be buttressed with that of the king's duty of protection, when it is required to justify the king's claim to one-half of the treasure-trove and of the output of mines. In the Śukranīti² the king is said to be ordained by the Supreme Creator as the servant of the subjects with his taxes as his fee.

The above theory of the reciprocal relation of taxation to protection doubtless had its basis, like the corresponding European theory, in the conception of an original contract between the ruler and his subjects. In the different versions of the origin of kingship occurring in the Buddhist canon, the Arthaśāstra and the Mahābhārata, the payment of certain specific taxes by the people and protection by the king are practically conceived as the two sides of the 'original contract.' In this doubtless lay the germs of a constitutional principle securing the subjects against the risk of reckless expenditure of revenues by the king. With it may be connected a maxim that is frequently repeated in the Smṛtis, *viz.*, that the king shares in the spiritual merits as well as demerits of his subjects.³ So strictly is the notion of the king's responsibility for protection carried out to its logical conclusion that the Smṛtis require him to make good the equivalent of the stolen property that he has failed to recover.⁴

The most complete account of the methods and principles of taxation that may be traced in our present authorities

¹ XVII, 48.

² I, 188; cf. *ibid.*, IV, 2.130.

³ For references see *Hindu Political Theories*, 2nd ed., p. 137n.

⁴ Cf. Gaut., X, 47; Viṣṇu, III, 67; Manu, VIII, 40; Yāj., II, 36.

occurs in two chapters of the Mahābhārata,¹ while corroborative as well as supplementary notices are furnished by the other sources. First, as regards the individual taxes, a verse of the Mahābhārata occurring in practically the same terms in Manu,² mentions that the king should fix the taxes upon merchants after examining the matters relating to purchase and sale, the distance travelled, the provisions consumed and the charges for securing the merchandise. This rule undoubtedly shows an appreciation of the difficulties attending the assessment of merchants' profits and indicates an attempt to throw the burden of taxation upon the net profits instead of charging the same upon the capital.³ The taxes upon artisans, we are told in the same context, should be fixed after repeatedly examining the amount of produce, the cost of construction and the branch of industry concerned. In fine, the king should fix all taxes after examining the resulting product and the labour bestowed upon it, for if these were to be ignored, no one would engage in business. This again illustrates an attempt to shift the burden of taxation upon the net profit.

As to the general principles of taxation a rule expressed in practically identical terms in the Mahābhārata and in Manu⁴ declares that the taxes should constantly be fixed by the king in such a way that he himself and the producer may participate in the result. The negative side of this teaching is expressed in the same context⁵ by stating that the king should not destroy his own substance, nor that of his subjects by showing excessive greed; for as Manu adds, the king by destroying his own substance becomes a means of oppression

¹ XII, 87-88.

² Mahā., XII, 87.13b-14a = Manu, VII, 127.

³ With this cf. Sismondi's first rule of taxation, *viz.*, that every tax should fall upon the revenue and not upon the capital (Bastable, p. 416).

⁴ Manu, VII, 128; Mahā., XII, 87. 17b-18a.

⁵ Manu, VII, 139; Mahā., XII, 87. 18.

to himself as well as his subjects. The sense of the last passage is expressed by Kauṭilya¹ who justifies the grant of advances and remissions to the cultivators on a sparing scale by saying that a king with depleted treasury oppresses his subjects. The practical consequence of this dictum is aptly expressed in a subsequent text of Manu² which states that the king, even though reduced to straitened circumstances, should not take what ought not to be taken, nor even though he is affluent should he forego his just dues, be they never so small. The above set of empirical rules, it would seem, embodies, however obscurely, a number of important principles. To begin with, the broad fact is recognised that the State revenues ultimately depend upon the production of wealth by individuals, and that whatever tends to diminish the latter is bound to react upon the former. Again, it is recognised that while taxation subserves the essential needs of the king or the State, it involves a diminution of the peoples' wealth. Hence the task of the statesman is to reconcile the needs of the State with the interests of the subjects.³

In connection with this point it may be remarked that our authors further illustrate their principles of taxation by the characteristic method of similes and metaphors. The king, we are told by Kauṭilya,⁴ should pluck the ripe fruits from his kingdom just as one gathers them from a garden, but should not take unripe fruits which cause provocation, lest this should bring about his own ruin. Just as the leech, the calf and the bee take their food little by little, says Manu,⁵

¹ II, 1. ² VII, 170-171.

³ Thus the Hindu theory avoided the vulgar fallacy which looks upon taxation as returning to the people in fertilising showers. An instance of this fallacy may be found in the great poet Kālidāsa who describes (*Raghuvamśam*, I, 18) King Dilipa as receiving the taxes from his subjects for their own welfare like the sun who extracts water in order to render it back a thousandfold.

⁴ V, 2.

⁵ VII, 129.

in terse language, so should the king take the annual taxes from his kingdom little by little. Just as a person wishing for milk, says the warrior-sage Bhīṣma in the Mahābhārata,¹ does not obtain the same by cutting off the udders of the cow, so a kingdom afflicted with improper means never prospers; just as a person who treats a cow with kindness obtains milk, so does the king who properly rules his kingdom derive advantages from it; the territory, being properly protected by the king, yields grain and cash as a gratified mother yields milk to her child. In fine the king is urged to be like the gardener and not like the maker of charcoal. The same ideas occur in connexion with a subsequent discourse of Bhīṣma which has already been referred to. The intelligent king, we are there told,² should milk his kingdom on the analogy of the calf; when the calf is given nourishment, it grows strong and is capable of enduring fatigue, but when the cow is milked too much, the calf cannot perform any work; so does a kingdom which is drained too much fail to perform any great service. The king, we are further told,³ should milk his kingdom just as bees suck honey from plants; he should draw the milk leaving something for the calf to drink and without piercing the udders; he should milk the kingdom little by little in the fashion of a leech; he should act like a tigress who takes her cubs with her teeth but does not bite them. He should suck his kingdom by mild means in the fashion of a mouse which, though possessed of sharp teeth, only produces a gentle rocking of the feet when biting a sleeping person. The king, then, should increase the taxes little by little and increase them again and again ever afterwards. Reference to the above homely simile as well as its reverse occurs in a well-known Buddhist collection of

¹ XII, 71. 16 ff.

² Mahā., XII, 87. 20-22.

³ *Ibid*, 88. 4-7.

stories called the Divyāvadāna which is dated about the third century after Christ. In one of its stories ¹ we are told how the two good ministers of a king admonish him in the following way : "Kingdoms, O Lord ! are like flowers and plants and fruit-trees ; just as flourishing plants and fruit-trees being nourished properly yield flowers and fruit at the proper season, so the kingdoms being protected yield taxes and revenues." On the other hand the two evil ministers who immediately succeed to the office of the good ones address the king in the following strain : "Sesamum, O Lord ! does not yield oil unless it is made to cry, torn to pieces, oppressed and pressed ; so also, O king, is the kingdom." To conclude this part of our subject we may mention that the late Śukranīti in the earlier fashion urges the king to take his share in the fashion of the gardener and not that of a maker of charcoal. Elsewhere it declares the best of kings to be one who increases his treasury by protecting his subjects in the fashion of a garland-maker.²

Let us now attempt to discover the principles embodied in the above series of empirical rules. To begin with, the fundamental principle which though obvious in modern times was systematically lost sight of in classical antiquity ³ is again tacitly recognised, namely, that the wealth produced by the subjects is the source of the State revenue. With this are connected the maxims:

- (a) that the taxation should not destroy the substance of the people, but should leave ample margin for their subsistence,
- (b) that the taxes should be levied by slow, almost imperceptible, degrees and not all in a lump, and

¹ *Ibid*, pp. 562-63, Cowell and Neil's edition.

² *Ibid*, IV, 2. 18; *ibid*, 113.

³ *Cf.* Bastable, pp. 17-18.

(c) that it should be levied at the time and place most suited for the subjects.

With the first and second of these maxims may be compared Sismondi's third and fourth rules of taxation,¹ namely, that "taxation should never touch what is necessary for the existence of the contributors," and that it "should not put to flight the wealth which it strikes." With the third maxim may be compared the third of the "classical" maxims of taxation enunciated by Adam Smith,² viz., that "every tax should be levied at the time or in the manner in which it is most likely to be convenient for the contributor to pay it."³

We may refer in this connection to a cardinal rule of public economy inculcated by our authorities which may be matched in the history of modern European States before the development of public credit, namely, that the king should accumulate a surplus after meeting the expenses of his administration. In Kauṭilya⁴ the Superintendent of storehouse is expected to keep half of his stock in reserve for meeting

¹ Bastable, p. 416.

² *Wealth of Nations*, p. 346.

³ Prof. Plehn in the latest edition of his authoritative work called *Introduction to Public Finance* (ed. 1924, p. 4) quotes on the authority of Burnell and Hopkins a maxim of Manu, which according to him anticipates the doctrine of progressive taxation and teaches that taxes should not be levied on the capital but on the income of the tax-payers, because otherwise the taxation would check the productive use of capital and lessen the production. We have already observed that the latter principle is implicitly embodied in one of Manu's rules of taxation. But no text of Manu can be held to imply the doctrine first mentioned. The nearest approach to this doctrine is made by Medhātithi, the illustrious commentator on the Manusamhitā, who understands Manu, VII, 128 to mean that there is no rule for fixing the taxes in the case of merchants' profits, and that where the profits are large, even an excessive rate may be levied.

⁴ II, 15.

future emergencies and spend the remaining half only. Among the qualities of a good treasury mentioned by Kauṭilya,¹ Kāmandaka² and Somadeva,³ is included the qualification that it should be capable of supporting the expenditure. The accumulation of stores of grain is inculcated upon the king in the Nītivākyaṃṛtam⁴ and the Sukranīti.⁵ In the Mahābhārata⁶ Nārada, questioning Yudhiṣṭhira on the administration of his realm, asks whether the king's expenditure is met out of one-half or one-third or three-fourths of the revenue.⁷

Closely connected with the above almost as a corollary is the injunction that the king should increase the funds of the State. Increase of wealth is mentioned by Kāmandaka⁸ along with its rightful acquisition and preservation as well as the expenditure of the surplus upon the deserving to be the fourfold occupation of the king. The Nītivākyaṃṛtam⁹ naïvely sets forth this rule by saying, "How can success come to a person who does not increase his treasury by even a *cowrie* every day ? "

¹ VI, 1.² VII, 60-61.³ Nītivākyaṃṛtam, XXI, 2.⁴ XVII, 66-67.⁵ IV, 2, 26.⁶ II, 5.

⁷ In the Mānasollāsa attributed to the Chalukya King Somesvara III (reigned c. 1125-1138 A.C.) the king is recommended to spend three-fourths of the revenue derived from his kingdom for purpose of the threefold end of life (virtue, wealth and desire) and save the remaining one-fourth for his treasury (*ibid.*, Vol. I, pp. 77-78, Baroda, 1925). According to the Sukranīti (IV, 3.16) the king should accumulate that amount of treasure which can support his army for twenty years without having recourse to fines, the royal grain-share and the tolls and customs duties. In the same context (*ibid.*, 22) wealth is said to be 'inferior' when it suffices for the support of kinsmen during twelve years, 'intermediate' when it suffices for sixteen years, and 'superior' when it does the same for thirty years.

⁸ I, 20.⁹ XXI, 4.

CHAPTER II

THE SOURCES OF REVENUE: THE LAND-REVENUE AND ASSOCIATED CHARGES UPON LAND.

I

By far the most systematic account of the heads of State revenue and expenditure that may be traced in the ancient Indian literature is that given by Kautilya in connection with his description¹ of the functions of the highest revenue officer called the Samāhartā ('Collector-general,' 'Obereinnehmer'). There Kautilya first classifies the 'body of income,' 'Einnahmenkörper' (*āyaśarīra*) under seven broad heads which are further sub-divided into sixty-seven constituent elements. The list is as follows :—

Group A.—The 'fortified city' (*durga*) which consists of twenty-one specified items,

Group B.—The 'country-part' (*rāṣṭra*) consisting of thirteen items,

Group C.—Mines (*khani*) of twelve specified classes,

Group D.—Irrigation-works consisting of five (or six) items,²

Group E.—Forests of three kinds,

Group F.—Herds (*vraja*) consisting of eight classes,

¹ II, § 15

² Five, according to Sh. and Gaṇ., six according to M. who takes *mūla-vāpa* in the original to consist of two separate items. In the present chapter the following abbreviations will be used: Sh.=Shamṣastry; Gaṇ.=T. Gaṇapati Sāstrī, ed. *Arthaśāstra* of Kautilya (Trivandrum, 1924-1925), M.=J. J. Meyer, *Das Altindische Buch vom Welt- und Staatsleben, Das Arthaśāstra des Kautilya*, Leipzig, 1926; Bhaṭṭ=Bhaṭṭasvāmīn's comm. on *Arthaśāstra*.

Group G. Trade-routes (*vaṇikpatha*) of two kinds,

- (1) land-routes,
- (2) sea-routes.

Besides the above classification of the 'body of income' Kautīlya introduces in the same context a shorter list of the 'sources of income,' 'Einnahmequellen' (*āyamukha*) under seven heads as follows :—

- (1) *mūla*, investment of capital,
- (2) *bhāga*, (king's) share (of the produce),
- (3) *vyāṇ*, compensation-fee, 'Vergütungsgebühr,'
- (4) *parigha*, 'door-bolt,' 'Tormaut,'
- (5) *kṛipta*, fixed tax,
- (6) *rūpika*, separate tax,
- (7) *atyaya*, money-fine.

Even a superficial examination of the above list shows that it is altogether wanting in the principle of scientific classification. Not to speak of the minor differences between taxes and fees, even the broad division between the economic and the non-economic receipts of the State is ignored in its composition. The truth is that the above classification is not that of a scientific theorist, but that of a practical administrator. The various groups under which the revenue items are arranged, it will be noticed, refer to convenient jurisdictions or centres of collection. The technical sense in which the separate items are used likewise points to this nature of the classification.

A somewhat more scientific, if far less complete, scheme of classification is that of Śukra.¹ He begins by defining the revenue (*āya*) as the cash, cattle, grain and so forth which accrue to the king every day, month and year, while he defines expenditure (*vyaya*) as wealth that goes to others.

¹ II, 321 ff.

Of the various classifications of revenue which he mentions in the following lines, it is necessary only to refer to the two-fold division into 'the revenue derived from land' and 'other kinds of revenue.' The former is divided into sub-groups according as it is derived from religious foundations, artificial water-supply as well as the country-part, the village and the city: the latter comprises tolls and duties (*śulka*), fines, taxes from mines, proceeds of hire, presents and the like. In the above scheme the definition of revenue is sufficiently comprehensive to include the most varied forms of State income, although the instances actually given are well-known items of taxation. In the second place the classification, doubtless reflecting the perennial feature of the Indian revenue system, involves the division into the two broad heads of land-revenue and all other forms of revenue, the former comprising besides the land-tax properly so called the water-tax, the tax on temples and the like, while the latter involves the jumbling together of taxes strictly so called, fines, presents, and the economic receipts of the king.

II

Branches of Land-revenue in the Arthaśāstra.

Among the sources of revenue above mentioned, it is proper to begin with the land-revenue and associated charges which have ever been the mainstay of Indian finance. The Arthaśāstra includes under the group 'country-part' (*rāṣṭra*) the following items:—

- (1) *sītā*, the produce (of the king's³ farm),
- (2) *bhāga*, the (king's) share of the produce,
- (3) *bali*, the king's receipts from begging,
- (4) *kara*, periodical taxes.

In the same chapter the Arthaśāstra further mentions a classification of revenue into three kinds, viz., 'the revenue derived from some other place' (*anyajāta*) (i.e., the accidental revenue), the 'running' (*varttamāna*) revenue and the 'outstanding' (*paryuṣita*) revenue. The first comprises among other things the following items:—*pārśva* ('margin-tax,' 'Seiten-einnahmen'), *pārihīnika* ('damage-fee') and *aupāyanika* (the income from presents). The above two groups are joined together on a somewhat different principle of classification in the chapter relating to the functions of the Superintendent of storehouse.¹ There we are told that this officer should among other things look after the following:—

- (1) *sītā*,
- (2) the 'country-part' (*rāṣṭra*) comprising
 - (a) *pinḍakara*, the lump assessment,
 - (b) *ṣaḍbhāga*, the sixth share of the harvest,
 - (c) *senābhakta*, 'the provisions for the army,'
 - (d) *bali*,
 - (e) *kara*,
 - (f) *utsaṅga*, 'Übersteuer,'
 - (g) *pārśva*,
 - (h) *pārihīnika*,
 - (i) *aupāyanika*,
 - (j) *kauṣṭheyaka*, the income from the king's storehouse,
- (3) *simhanikā*, work performed in lieu of taxes.
- (4) *anyajāta*, 'revenue derived from some other place,' comprising the group of 'what is remembered after being lost' and the like.
- (5) *upasthāna*, 'joining-in.'²

¹ II, 15.

² The above follows the rendering of M. who gives the equivalent 'hinzutritt.'

On comparing the last classification with the one first mentioned it appears that in the latter case the agricultural produce of the royal fields forms an independent item separate from the group 'country-part,' while the specific term 'sixth share' is substituted for the more general designation 'share' and the items severally called *pārśva*, *pārihīnika*, and *aupāyanika* are taken away from the class 'accidental revenue' for inclusion in the group 'country-part.' It will presently appear that the Arthaśāstra contemplates the agricultural produce of the royal fields as falling within the scope of a special officer called the Superintendent of agriculture, while the king's share and the like along with the *pārśva* and other items are comprised within the jurisdiction of the Superintendent of storehouse. It may therefore be surmised that the latter classification, even much more than the former, was based upon convenient groupings of administrative jurisdiction.

A. *Sītā*.

Beginning our analysis of the items of revenue mentioned above with the term *sītā*, we notice at the outset that Kautilya defines it ¹ as comprising "all kinds of crops that are brought in by the Superintendent of agriculture." Now in the chapter relating to the functions of this officer ² we are told among other things that he should collect seeds of various specified kinds. When the suitable lands ³ had been many times ploughed up, he is to cause them to be sown by slaves, free labourers and convicts. He is to provide them

¹ II, 15.

² II, 24.

³ *Svabhūmi*, thus rendered by Gan. and M. following Bhaṭṭ. On the other hand this term is tr. as 'crown lands' by Sh. and 'königliche Domäne' by Jolly. This difference, however, does not alter the present interpretation of the whole.

with agricultural implements and appliances as well as the human and animal labour needed for cultivation. What remains after sowing¹ is to be worked up by those who cultivate the fields in return for half of the harvest, or else by those who live by their own labour and receive one-fourth or one-fifth of the harvest.² Except when they have fallen into difficulties the cultivators should pay a share of the crop according to the wish (of the king or the royal officer) in the event of their failure to cultivate the fields that they have taken up.³

In continuation of the above we are told that the cultivators should pay from the (king's) own irrigation-

¹ *Vāpātirikta*, so explained by Bhaṭṭ., Gaṇ., Sh. and M. Another explanation has been recently suggested by E. H. Johnston (J.R.A.S., 1929, p. 92) who adds *vā* after *vāpātirikta* and understands the whole passage to mean that 'alternately the land should be let out to cultivators who pay half the produce as rent on the *vāpātirikta* system,' i.e., the system under which 'an amount equal to the seed sown is deducted from the gross produce of the field and handed over to the tenant, the balance being then divided between the king and the tenant.' This explanation which is supported by the writer's testimony regarding the prevalence of similar conditions of tenure in Behar at present may be the right one.

² The above follows the expln. of Gaṇ. and M. On the other hand E. H. Johnston (*loc. cit.*, pp. 94-95) suggests an amended translation of *chaturthapañchabhāgikam* as 'paying a fourth or fifth share of the produce as rent' and that of *svavīryopajivins* as 'those who live by exploitation of their martial qualities.' This explanation is plausible enough, but it is disproved by the fact that Megasthenes (according to Strabo) testified to the tilling of lands by the cultivators of the Maurya Empire on condition of their receiving one-fourth of the produce. (See below.)

³ A probably better explanation of this passage is that suggested by E. H. Johnston (*loc. cit.*, p. 95) who would explain it in the following way: "They may pay a share other than those set out in the previous sentence, as may be agreed on" except in cases "where the king's stocks of grain are deficient," when apparently the land is to be cultivated directly by the king's officers instead of being let out on favourable terms to the tenants.

works¹ water-rates amounting to $\frac{1}{8}$ th, or $\frac{1}{4}$ th or $\frac{1}{3}$ rd according as the water is derived from manual labour or animal labour or from machines: they are to pay $\frac{1}{4}$ th when the water is drawn out of rivers, lakes, reservoirs and wells. Or else the Superintendent of agriculture is to grow winter or summer crops in the low lands according to the supply of water available for the irrigation.²

The above extract, it is now generally admitted,³ refers to the cultivation of royal farms either by the direct agency of State officers or else under their supervision by the tenants. The contrary view⁴ is disproved by the fact that a special revenue term (*sītā*) is used for the whole produce from this source instead of the more usual *bhāga* which doubtless represents the king's grain-share levied on the ordinary revenue-paying lands, while the minute rules laid down in the present context regarding the sowing and reaping of crops, the payment of agricultural labourers and the like would be quite out of place if the Superintendent of agriculture were to be any

¹ The above follows the construction (*svasetubhyah* joined on to the following sentence) adopted by Bhaṭṭ. and followed by Gaṇ. and M. This is justified among other reasons by the antithesis evidently intended between *svasetu* and *nadī*, etc., in the following sentence. As to the term *svasetu* Gaṇ. takes it to mean 'reservoirs and the like constructed by the cultivators themselves.' Though this meaning gives the most natural sense and the one best fitting the famous maxim of the king's lordship of land and water quoted by the commentator, it fails to explain why the use of the State irrigation-works should not be subject to the water-rate. In the following Book dealing with the Civil Law Kautilya (III, 9) refers to the rents for the use of private irrigation-works. This points by analogy to the prevalence of charges for the use of State irrigation-works as well.

² I follow E. H. Johnston's suggested reading (*loc. cit.*, p. 9) of *kedāre* instead of the readings *kedāram* (Sh. and Jolly—Schmidt) and *kaidāram* (Gaṇ.), as this very much improves the sense.

³ Cf. Stein, p. 128; Meyer, pp. 180-181n.

⁴ Cf. Bernhard Breloer, *Kauṭaliya-Studien*, I, p. 75.

other than a steward of the royal farm. Nor is it possible in the complete absence of any corroborative testimony to subscribe to the explanation¹ that while the half-cultivators tilled the king's fields, those who are said to live by their labour cultivated their own fields with the support of the royal domain. Reminiscences of the system of State farms may be traced in the later literature.² Again, the history of the Indian land systems in modern times presents many analogous cases. In many parts of Northern India, for example the Zemindar possesses over and above the *rāiyati* lands, private lands or home farms which have been protected for them by special clauses in the successive Rent Acts of the British Government. The latter class of lands (called *nij-jote* and *khāmār* in Bengal, *zirat*, *nij* and *bakasht mālik* in Behar and by other names in other provinces is either worked directly by the Zemindar's men or else let out to tenants (*burgādārs*) on some principle of division of crops. Again in certain parts of the country, specially among the Kolarian and Dravidian communities, the Rājā in pre-British times used to obtain a substantial portion of his revenue from the produce of his allotment of the village lands (called *majhas* in Chota Nagpur and *pānniyā* in Coorg which were let out to tenants or else cultivated by slaves.³

With regard to the rules in the present context relating to the irrigated fields, it is legitimate to infer from the above

¹ Stein, pp. 128-129, 238n.

² Cf. Nandapaṇḍita's comm. on Viṣṇu, LVII, 16: "An *ardhika* is one who yields half the produce of his fields to the king." The *ardhikas* (otherwise called *ardhasirins*) are mentioned in the Smṛtis (Manu, IV, 253; Yāj., I, 166; Viṣṇu, LVII, 16; etc.) as a favoured class of Sūdra cultivators whose food may be taken by householders of the regenerate classes.

³ Baden-Powell, *Land Systems*, Vol. I, pp. 119, 577; Vol. III, p. 476; Sarat Chandra Ray, *The Mundas and their Country*, App., p. xlix, etc.

that they likewise referred to cultivation of the royal farms. There is indeed hardly any room for doubting with Stein¹ and Meyer² the nature of the charge which is levied upon the irrigated lands, for Kautilya evidently contemplates the whole output collected by the Superintendent of agriculture as consisting of crops. This assessment is said to vary according to the kind and method of irrigation practised, as it comprises three distinct rates for lands served by the State irrigation works and a uniform rate of $\frac{1}{4}$ th for lands irrigated by rivers, lakes, tanks and wells. Whether this assessment was intended to be a substitute for or an addition to the ordinary land-revenue is a question to which no certain answer can be given. But modern analogies may help to throw some light upon this problem. In the Punjab the lands watered by wells or canals were till recent times first assessed on their ordinary or dry aspect and then an additional rate called the water-advantage rate was levied on them.³ In the Ajmere tract where permanent cultivation depends upon tanks and wells, all lands bear a small primary charge in their dry aspect and tank-watered lands bear the dry rate *plus* the rate proper to the kind or class or tank available. For this purpose it is usual to divide the tanks into distinct classes such as those supplying water for both the spring and the autumn harvest and those containing a supply of water sufficient only for the autumn crop, but not for the spring one.⁴ It is interesting to remember that Kautilya requires the Superintendent of agriculture in the above passage to grow winter or summer crops according to the supply of water available for irrigation.

¹ *Megasthenes und Kautilya*, p. 239.

² See M.'s alternative explanation of the above text, p. 181n.

³ Baden-Powell, *Land Systems*, Vol. II, p. 574.

⁴ *Ibid.*, pp. 353-354.

To sum up the above discussion Kauṭilya, it would seem, recommended the following methods of cultivation of the State farms :—

- (1) Fields already ploughed up to be sown under supervision of the king's steward by slaves, convicts or free-labourers, the Government providing the seeds, the implements, the bullocks and the accessory labour. In this case evidently the whole net produce of the fields went into the king's granary.
- (2) Fields left unsown apparently for want of seeds and agricultural labour to be let out to tenants of two classes, namely, those who provided all the cattle and in return got half of the harvest and those who provided only the manual labour and got $\frac{1}{4}$ th or $\frac{1}{5}$ th of the crop. In this case the balance of the output would be credited to the king's revenue.
- (3) Fields taken up by the tenants under the last-named arrangement, but not cultivated by them. In this case the rent or revenue is not to consist of a specific share of the produce but the contracted or customary rates.
- (4) Irrigated lands situated within the bounds of the royal farms to be let out to the tenants on condition of payment of varying water-rates.
- (5) Irrigated lands as above situated to be cultivated directly under the supervision of the king's steward.

B. *Bhāga*.

While the *sītā*, as we have seen, is in essence the collective output of the royal farms, the *bhāga* may be rightly taken to be the king's customary share of the produce levied on the ordinary revenue-paying lands. Payment of the land-revenue in kind may be traced among the Hindu States of Northern

India down to recent times, while the system of rent payment in kind by the tenants of private estates prevails largely under the names *bhāoli* and *bātāi*. As to the rates of this tax in Kauṭilya we find him once¹ using the specific term sixth share (*ṣaḍbhāga*) instead of the more indefinite 'share' (*bhāga*). The Arthaśāstra, moreover, shows how $\frac{1}{6}$ th of the grain-share was traditionally held in its time to have been paid by the subjects at the beginning of kingship, while the hermits living in the forest still paid the royal contribution from their gleanings at this specific rate.² On the other hand it is significant that upland (*sthala*) and low land (*kedāra*) are mentioned as separate items for entry in the field-register of the *gopa* ('village accountant,' 'Revieraufseher').³ This would be meaningless if the two classes of soils here mentioned were not assessed for the land-revenue at different rates.⁴ Moreover Kauṭilya, while laying down the rules for extraordinary revenue,⁵ contemplates unhusked grain to be assessed at $\frac{1}{3}$ rd or $\frac{1}{4}$ th of the crop on rich soils which are independent of rain-water, while soils of intermediate and inferior qualities evidently paid lower rates. It may therefore be surmised that the king's grain-share was assessed in the Arthaśāstra on differential rates for different classes of soils.⁶

¹ II, 15.

² I, 18. A reference in Kālidāsa's famous drama, the *Śakuntalā* (Act II), shows how this particular form of pious contribution from the hermits had been commuted in its time into the more shadowy contribution of $\frac{1}{6}$ of their accumulated spiritual merits.

³ Kauṭ., II, 35.

⁴ It may be mentioned that those two classes of soils are still assessed at different rates in Behar and other provinces.

⁵ V, 2.

⁶ Cf. the definition of *bhāga* as ' $\frac{1}{6}$ th and the like payable to the king' in the Arthaśāstra text quoted by Kṣīrasvāmin in his commentary on Amara, II, 8. 28.

C, D, E, F, G, H, I, J, K. *Bali*, *kara*, *piṇḍakara*, *senābhakta*, *utsaṅga*, *pārśva*, *pārihinika*, *aupāyanika* (earnings from presents), *kauṣṭheyaka* (earnings from the king's store-house).

While *bhāga* doubtless forms the essential branch of land-revenue, the charges above mentioned appear from their nature and from attendant circumstances to partake of the character of additional imposts corresponding to the later *abwabs*. With the exception of *bali* and *kara* these items do not figure in the general classification of revenues obviously because of their comparative insignificance.

The term *bali* is defined by the commentator Bhaṭṭasvāmin in the above context as comprising the ten-fold, the twenty-fold and the like charges in case of the sixth share as prevalent in specified tracts. An Arthaśāstra text, quoted by Kṣīrasvāmin,¹ while similarly distinguishing between *bhāga*, *kara* and *bali*, defines the last as a means of subsistence of the king's officials. As used in the Arthaśāstra, therefore, *bali* stands for an undefined cess over and above the king's normal share of the produce (*bhāga*).²

The term *kara* in its special sense as used by Kauṭilya, is defined by Bhaṭṭ. as 'the annual tax paid during the months of *Bhādrapada*, *Vasanta* and the like,' while the Arthaśāstra text of Kṣīrasvāmin understands it to be a charge upon all movable and immovable articles. From this it would follow that *kara* was a general property-tax levied periodically. The other

¹ Comm. on Amara, II, 8. 28.

² Less plausible, because not sufficiently authenticated, explanations of *bali* are 'religious tax' (Sh.), 'receipts from begging' (Gaṇ.), the so-called voluntary contributions of the subjects (M.). On this see the author's paper *Some Hindu fiscal terms discussed in Proc. of the All-India Oriental Conference* (Allahabad, 1928).

interpretations offered by modern writers, *viz.*, 'taxes paid in money,' 'taxes or subsidies paid by vassal kings and others,' 'taxes levied upon fruit-trees'—are lacking in authentication.¹

As to the term *piṇḍakara* Bhaṭṭ. defines it as comprising taxes levied upon whole villages. Evidently this refers to the lump assessment upon villages as distinguished from the king's grain-share assessed upon the individual cultivators. The *bhāga* and *piṇḍakara* would appear to correspond to the *bhāgabhogakara* and *udraṅga* of the inscriptions.

The term *senābhakta* is defined by Bhaṭṭ. as 'the king's dues of oil, rice and the like payable at the time of marching of the army as prevalent in specified countries.'²

The Arthaśāstra, as we have seen, includes under the class 'country-part' the branches of revenue called *utsaṅga* and the earnings from the presents. The former is defined by Bhaṭṭ. as 'what is paid by the inhabitants of the city and the country-part on the occasion of some festive event such as the birth of a prince. Evidently it was not a regular but an occasional impost corresponding to the cesses illegally levied by the *zemindars* in Bengal and elsewhere on similar occasions.'³

¹ The first two interpretations are offered by Sh. and the third by Gaṇ. The Arthaśāstra, moreover, knows the use of *kara* in the sense of a tax in general. Cf. Kauṭ., I, 13 (*daṇḍakara*); *ibid.*, II, 1; III, 10; etc. (*karada*). In Kauṭ., V, 2, *kara* seems to be used in the specific sense of an emergency tax levied upon dealers, artisans and the like.

² The vernacular commentary quoted by Gaṇ. understands it to mean the portion of oil, rice and the like contributed by the troops for the king's benefit when receiving their supply of rice, corn and so forth. But this interpretation is improbable in view of the juxtaposition of *senābhakta* with *piṇḍakara*, *ṣaḍbhāga*, *bali* and so forth in the text of Kauṭ. aforesaid.

³ Among the *abwabs* of Bengal expressly declared to be illegal by the decisions of the High Court may be mentioned the *purvi bhikṣā* which was a sum collected on the occasion of the ceremony of first partaking of rice by the *zemindar's* son. See Bengal Tenancy Act, 1885, ed. Chatterjee and Kerr, 6th ed., p. 275).

That the earnings from presents were of the same character is shown by their inclusion in the class of 'accidental revenue.'¹ References to presents called *paññākārā* which are given to the king on the occasion of his coronation or even when approaching him with a petition occur in the Jātaka and Dhammapada commentaries.²

The term *pārśva* is explained by Bhaṭṭ. as 'the charge collected in excess of the proper tax as mentioned in the chapter on replenishment of the treasury,' or according to others, 'the tax realised by virtue of the king's sovereign authority.' According to Meyer³ it corresponds to the term *pārśvika* which is mentioned by Viṣṇu,⁴ among the sources of 'black wealth' (that is, wealth unfit for spending on offerings to the deities). If this identification were to be accepted, it would follow that this branch of revenue was condemned by the authority of the Smṛtis.

Other Charges upon Agricultural Land.

The above enumeration exhausts the whole list of taxes and charges upon agricultural land that are mentioned by Kauṭilya in his formal scheme of classification. But indirect references in the Arthaśāstra point to a few other items of the same kind. In the great revenue-roll of the kingdom which is to be prepared by the *samāhartā*,⁵ the contributions paid by the villages in grain, cattle, cash, raw materials and the like, are required to be entered separately. With the first

¹ Kauṭ., II, 6. Elsewhere (II, 8) Kauṭ. mentions the presents in cash among the methods of increasing the king's revenue.

² Fick, *Die Sociale Gliederung*, p. 76 ; P.T. S. Diet., s. v. *paññākāra*.

³ P. 692.

⁴ LVIII, 11.

⁵ Kauṭ., II, 35.

group, which doubtless comprises the heads of revenue severally called *sītā*, *bhāga*, *bali* and the like, we are not concerned here as they have been dealt with already. The contribution in cattle is a well-known branch of revenue in the Smṛtis where it is usually assessed at the surprisingly low rate of 1/50th. As we shall presently see, Megasthenes (according to Arrian) testified to the class of herdsmen in the empire of the Mauryas as paying their tax in cattle.¹ As regards the contribution in cash it is one of the recognised branches of revenue in the Smṛtis where it is assessed like the cattle-tax at the standard rate of 1/50th. Kauṭilya mentions it in the list of taxes paid by the subjects at the creation of kingship according to the traditional story.² This tax, we have ventured to suggest elsewhere, should be understood to mean the contribution in cash derived by the king from certain special kinds of crops. With the contribution of raw materials above mentioned may be compared the king's share of jungle products and the like mentioned in the Smṛtis. As used in the present context it must be distinguished from the produce of the State forests of raw materials which the Superintendent in charge was expected to gather and convert into manufactured products.³ Lastly, as regards the contribution in unpaid labour it is significant that like the contribution in cash it is expected to be entered by the *gopa* in his register of houses.⁴ Evidently it was a burden devolving specially, if not exclusively, upon the villages and was assessed on some principle of rating according to houses.⁵ The

¹ From Kauṭ.'s mention of 'benevolences' (*pranaya*) levied upon breeders of animals (V, 2) it may be surmised that some kind of charge was imposed upon them during normal times.

² I, 13.

³ II, 17.

⁴ II, 35.

⁵ The text of the late Smṛti work attributed to Saṅkha and Likhita which Chanḍesvara quotes in his Vivādaratnākara (p. 662) mentions that the towns were exempted from the dues for unpaid labour (*vaiṣṭika*) and dues for service as messengers (*jāṅghika*).

Arthasāstra mentions, as indeed is natural under the circumstances, different varieties of unpaid labour. Mention is made, for example, of its employment in the State workshops :¹ it was employed in the office of the Superintendent of storehouse where it comprised a staff of sweepers, weighers, measurers, slaves, workmen and so forth.² Forced labour was also employed in warfare where its functions are described³ as consisting in (a) cleansing the camp, the roads, the bridges, wells, and landing stages, (b) carrying machines, weapons, armour, instruments and provisions, and (c) carrying weapons, armour and the wounded soldiers from the battle-field. That this was a potential source of oppression is proved by Kautilya's warning against the oppressive exaction of unpaid labour from agriculture.⁴ References in the literature of folklore point to the same conclusion. The Jātaka commentary⁵ tells the story of a king of Benares who was passionately fond of hunting and forced his subjects to flock to the deer-forest to the neglect of their own work. In the introduction to another Jātaka story we are told⁶ in the course of interpretation of a king's dream that in days to come the kingdom would grow weak and the king in his distress would make his subjects work for him, while the oppressed people would neglect their own work and fill up the king's granary.

¹ II, 7.

² II, 15.

³ X, 4.

⁴ II, 1.

⁵ Vol. I, pp. 149-150.

⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 339. The prevalence of the system of unpaid labour may be traced in various parts of Northern India through the mediaeval period down to our own day. *Bhet* and *begār* occur in the list of imposts formally abolished by the Emperor Aurangzeb in 1673 A. C. (Sarkar, *Mughal Administration*, p. 126). In the Hindu States of Rajputana and the Himalayan States *begār* at the present time is a standing complaint of the people.

Revenue from Village Pastures and Boundaries.

In the above list of heads of revenue the Arthaśāstra includes under the class 'country-part' (*rāṣṭra*) two items called 'pastures' (*vivita*) and 'ropes for binding thieves' (*chorarajju*). The nature of this branch of revenue will perhaps appear from an examination of the functions of the officers concerned. The Superintendent of pastures, we are told should,¹ examine *inter alia* the passports evidently of those lurking on the out-of-the-way tracts. He is to set up pasture-lands in troublesome tracts intervening between the villages : he is to make the lower forest region (evidently down the slopes of the village sites) safe from thieves and wild animals : he is to dig wells and plant gardens in waterless areas : in fine he is to arrange for the means of subsistence with respect to forests of two specified kinds, to provide for the transit duties, to ensure security against thieves, to escort caravans to protect the cattle (of the villagers) and to carry on traffic. In another place² we are told that while the village headman is to compensate the caravan for theft or removal of their goods at night within the village limits, the Superintendent of pastures is to be similarly liable for their loss on the village boundary, while the officer charged with the arrest of thieves (*chora-rajjuka*) should be liable for loss in a place which is not pasture-land. A very similar rule occurs in Yāj.³ where we are told that the village headman (*grāmahartā*) is liable for murder and theft when the marks of the crime cannot be traced outside the village, but the 'guardian of pasture-land' (*vivitabhartā*) is liable for these offences when they are committed on the road and the police officer (*chauroddhartā*)

¹ Kauṭ., II, 34.

² *Ibid*, IV, 13.

³ *Ibid*, II, 271.

is liable when the offences are committed in a place which is not pasture-land. The *vivītabhartā* and *chauroddhartā* of Yāj. evidently correspond respectively to the *vivītādhyakṣa* and *chorarājyuka* of the *Arthaśāstra*. Both these officers, it would seem, were charged with police functions, the former's jurisdiction extending over the tract immediately outside the village limits, while that of the latter extended over the tract further beyond.

Let us now consider how far the above functions could be drawn into sources of the royal revenue. As regards the collection of the transit duties it could not have been the principal branch of receipts of the Superintendent of pastures here in view, since the transit duties (*varttanī*) are mentioned apart from the 'pasture-land' in the list of revenues under the class 'country-part.' On the other hand the function of tracking criminals shared by the Superintendent with the officer for arresting thieves would almost certainly entail a fee from the villagers for this special service. The same would apparently be the case with the Superintendent's function of escorting caravans and of protecting the (village) cattle.¹ The mention of traffic and of the means of subsistence from forests in the list of the Superintendent's functions suggests more obvious sources of revenue for the royal exchequer.

Revenue-free Lands, Service-lands and the Like.

We have so far considered, in connection with our analysis of the heads of land-revenue in the *Arthaśāstra*, the cases of ordinary revenue-paying lands. It now remains for us to notice other cases where the lands are either held revenue-free without any condition or in return for some specific service. In the chapter relating to the *samāhartā*'s functions he

¹ Cf. Gaṇ.'s expln. of *chorarakṣanam*, *sārthātivāhyam* and *gorakṣyam* in the concluding verse of Kauṭ., II, 34.

is required virtually to prepare a revenue-roll of the kingdom containing a statement of the revenue-free lands (*pārihārika*), the lands supplying troops (*āyudhīya*) and the contributions payable by the villagers in various specified forms. From this it follows that the two classes of lands first named were held to be immune from payment of the ordinary land-revenue. The *Arthaśāstra*, too, elsewhere¹ distinguishes between the taxable (*karada*) and tax-free (*akarada*) persons as well as villages. The most important class of revenue-free lands in the *Arthaśāstra* consists, naturally enough, of the lands held by the *Brāhmaṇas*. In the chapter relating to the settlement of new and old tracts² Kauṭ. requires the king to grant lands exempted from taxes and fines and accompanied with excellent gifts to the following classes of persons:—the sacrificing priest, the preceptor, the domestic chaplain (*purohita*) and the learned *Brāhmaṇa*. Evidently it was the normal rule for such lands to be held revenue-free. Evidence to this effect is also furnished by the fact that elsewhere³ Kauṭilya, even while inculcating the methods of raising the revenue during emergencies, expressly enjoins the immunity of the learned *Brāhmaṇa*'s property.

In the class of revenue-free lands contemplated in the *Arthaśāstra* may be mentioned, next to the lands held by the *Brāhmaṇas*, those assigned to the State officers for pious purposes. Thus the *Arthaśāstra* mentions in one place⁴ the *brahmadeya* lands side by side with the *ātithya* which the commentator explains as 'lands granted to the judicial officers for the purpose of alms-giving and such other pious acts.' In Muhammadan times too it was the frequent practice for rulers to grant small holdings of land free of revenue for the support of mosques, schools, bridges or tanks and these grants (called *inām* or *mu'āfi*) were usually hereditary

¹ Cf. II, I, III, 10, etc.

³ V, 2.

² II, 1.

II, 20.

and permanent as long as the object of their endowment was observed.¹

The last item to be mentioned under the present head consists of the forest produce which Kautilya declares in one place² to be exempt from the king's levy of benevolences. The most natural explanation of this rule would be to refer it to the village jungle which would thus be held to be enjoyed free of charge by the villagers. As we shall presently see, the jungle (*aranya*) and road areas of the villages are required to be entered in the *gopa's* register separately from the village boundaries and village fields.³

The Arthaśāstra also mentions in the above connection the class of lands held by various grades of State and village officers, village servants and the like as remuneration for their service. Thus in the chapter describing the measures for colonisation of lands, which we have so often quoted, the king is enjoined to make grants of land without the right of sale or mortgage to the following classes of persons:—superintendents (*adhyakṣas*), the accountants and so forth, the *gopas*, the *sthānikas*, the veterinary surgeons, the physicians, the horse-trainers and the messengers. Evidently such grants formed part of the normal arrangement for revenue administration in the system of the Arthaśāstra. With this may be compared the method of remuneration of village and circle officers mentioned in Manu and the Mahābhārata⁴:—

The 'lord' of 10	villages	...	one <i>kula</i> of land. ⁵
" "	" 20	"	5 <i>kulas</i> .
" "	" 100	"	one (entire) village.
" "	" 1,000	"	one (entire) town.

It will be noticed that while the rule in the Smṛti and the Epic claims unlike the Arthaśāstra to fix the amount

¹ Baden-Powell, Land Systems, Vol. I, p. 190.

² V, 2.

³ See Kauṭ., II, 35.

⁴ Manu, VII, 119; Mahā., XII, 87. 6-8.

⁵ i.e., 'as much land as can be cultivated with twelve oxen.'

of official land-holding of the officers concerned with rural administration, the Arthaśāstra contemplates the Superintendents, the village servants and the like, as participating in such grants as well. Moreover the Arthaśāstra unlike the Smṛti and the Epic expressly restricts the right of the grantees to a mere usufructuary possession. It is natural to compare this form of remuneration mentioned in the Arthaśāstra and the Smṛti tradition with the *waṭan* or the 'official land-holding (together with privileges) of the village and *parganaḥ* officers' which came into vogue in Muhammadan times. Between the two there is, however, one important difference in that the *waṭan* has always been regarded not only as hereditary but also as saleable.¹ In so far as the grant of lands to the Superintendents is concerned, it must be remembered that the Arthaśāstra² awards them in addition a cash salary of 1,000 (*panas*). It is perhaps possible to trace a distant resemblance between the arrangement in the Arthaśāstra and the method of granting *jāigīrs* which was brought into vogue by the Muhammadan rulers.³ But the *jāigīr*, it must be remembered, was essentially an assignment of the land-revenue which was made for a variety of purposes, and having been originally held for life became afterwards permanent and hereditary. It may be mentioned that the Arthaśāstra condemns by anticipation one form of *jāigīr* which was made in later times for the encouragement of colonisation of a jungle tract.⁴

¹ Cf. Baden-Powell, *Land Systems*, Vol. I, p. 180ff.; *ibid*, Vol. II, p. 467, etc.

² V, 2.

³ In the Mughal imperial system the royal princes and high officers sometimes received fixed cash salaries from the imperial exchequer in addition to their assignment of *jāigīrs*. Cf. Sarkar, *History of Aurangzeb*, Vol. I, pp. 179-180.

⁴ The reference is to V, 3 where Kauṭ. enjoins the king who is determined to colonise waste lands to grant cash allowances (*hiranya*), but not villages.

Turning to the last class of lands that we have to consider in the present connection we may mention that the term (*āyudhīya*) which figures in the revenue-roll of the Samāhartā is usually taken to refer to the contribution of troops supplied by the villages concerned.¹ If it be supposed that this class of lands was granted by the king on condition of performance of military service, we have here a parallel of one form of *jāgīr* of later times, namely, that which involved the assignment of revenue for the support of troops.

Land-revenue Assessment and Collection.

Some light is thrown upon the methods of assessment and collection of the land-revenue and incidentally upon a few accidental sources of revenue by Kauṭ.'s description of the functions of various revenue officers. Thus in the first place the Superintendent of the royal granary, as we have seen, is required to take into consideration the groups called 'produce of the royal fields' (*sītā*) and 'country-part' (*rāstra*), which technically exhausts the whole stock of State receipts from agricultural lands. In the same context the Arthasāstra mentions a list of the Superintendent's accessories (*upakaraṇa*) including vessels for weighing and for measurement together with the Superintendent's staff of unpaid labour (*viṣṭi*) including the persons charged with

¹ The contrary interpretation of M. ('die Leistungen für das Heer') involving the rejection of the interpretation of Sh., Gap., Stein, Hillebrandt and others is untenable. As the *āyudhīya* is distinguished in the above-mentioned text of the Arthasāstra from the items grains, cattle, cash, raw materials and the like, it must be something different in kind from all the rest. Moreover M. himself holds it to be very likely that some villages paid their taxes in the form of military contingents. Elsewhere (V, 3.) *āyudhīya* is undoubtedly used by Kauṭ. in the sense of 'troops' and M. himself translates it as 'Soldaten.'

weighing (*dhāraka*), with measuring (*māyaka*), with supervision of the last named (*māpaka*) and with receiving the wooden slips used as markers (*śalākāpratigrāhaka*). In the same connection the Arthaśāstra mentions branches of the Superintendent's functions involving (a) the purchase and sale as well as putting out to interest of the grain received, (b) barter of one class of grain from another, (c) begging of grain and (d) loan of the same. The above evidently implies that the king's share of grain and of other agricultural produce was received in kind. But the king's grain-share instead of being stored at once in the royal granary was expected to be put to the best investment and the deficiency in the supply was expected to be met by loans or even by begging. The Arthaśāstra, however, leaves us in doubt as to the method of division of the agricultural produce, whether it was by means of simple appraisement or by actual division on the threshing floor.

Another function of the Superintendent mentioned in the same connection hints at underhand methods of increasing the king's receipts in the process of collection of his grain-share. This is indicated by the technical term *upasthā* ('*hinzutritt* ') which comprises among other things the following items :—

- (1) the difference in weights and measures,
- (2) filling up of the hand,
- (3) *utkara* ('*die Aufhäufung* '),
- (4) *vyājī* ('*Vergütungsgebühr* ').

All these are evidently different means of obtaining something more than is warranted by the exact weight or measure of the king's share of the produce. The second and third items do not call for any remark as they are essentially of the nature of tricks. As to the first item Kautilya mentions in his chapter on weights and measures ¹ the balance for weighing

the king's receipts (*āyamānī*) which differs from the balance in general use (*vyāvahārika*), while he lays down the general rule that an excess of 5 per cent. ('five *palas* in the hundred'), should be paid when things other than some specified articles are weighed in the balance called *samavṛttā* and *parimānī*. The same chapter mentions a unit of measure for the king's receipts (*āyamāna*) differing from the unit for ordinary transactions (*vyāvahārika*). As regards the fourth item the same chapter lays down the rates of 'compensation-fee' as follows:—

For clarified butter (as compensation for its heated condition)	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{32}$,
For oil (as above)	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{64}$,
For liquids in general (as compensation for overflow or for adhering to the measuring vessel)	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{50}$,

Much more important than the above from the point of view of land-revenue assessment is Kauṭilya's account of the functions of the revenue officers severally called the *samāhartā* ('collector-general,' 'Obereinnehmer'), the *sthānika* ('Kreisauferseher') and the *gopa* ('Revieraufseher'). The *samāhartā* is in the *Arthaśāstra* the officer charged with the collection of all kinds of revenue from the kingdom. Now in the chapter relating to his functions¹ we are told that he should virtually prepare a revenue-roll of the whole kingdom (*janapada*). From the ensuing description it appears that the *samāhartā's* duties in this connection comprised the following:—

1. Division of the kingdom into four parts apparently corresponding to the jurisdiction of the four *sthānikas*,
2. Arrangement of the total number of villages in each part into three grades, good, intermediate and bad,
3. Preparation of a written record (*nibandha*) of the revenue-free lands, the lands liable to military service

in lieu of taxes¹ as well as the contributions payable by the villages severally and collectively under the heads of grain, cattle, cash, unpaid labour and compensation for taxes.²

Under the *samāhartā*'s instructions, we are told in the same context, the *gopa* is to superintend five or ten villages. From the immediately following description the *gopa*'s functions in this connection would appear to comprise the following:—

1. Ascertainment of the total area of the villages within his circle by means of inspection of the village boundaries.
2. Ascertainment of the total areas of fields by numbering cultivated and uncultivated plots, the upland and lowland plots, the gardens, fruit-gardens, the sugar-cane gardens, (the village) jungle, the homestead land, the sacred sites, the shrines, the embanked reservoirs, the cremation grounds, the sites for the distribution of alms and of drinking water, the sacred sites, the grazing grounds and the roads.
3. Preparation 'on the basis of the above numbering' of the following registers (*nibandhas*):—
 - (a) register of boundaries and village fields,
 - (b) register of unculturable land ('forests' and 'roads'),
 - (c) register of transfers ('gifts' and 'sales'),
 - (d) the amount of loan advanced (*anugraha*) and revenue remissions (*parihāra*),

¹ For this explanation of the term *āyudhīya*, see above.

² *Pratikara* trans. as *Steuerersetzungen* by M. who rightly rejects the renderings 'fixed tax' (Gaṇ.) and 'dairy produce in lieu of tax' (Sh.). The *Rājataranīṅī* uses it in the sense of allowances paid by the State to dispossessed owners of temple lands (see below, Part III, Ch. V).

4. Preparation of a census of houses under the following heads:—

Serial no. of house.	Whether taxable or tax- free.	No. of				No. of			
		Br.	Kṣ.	Va.	Śū.	Cultiva- tors.	Herdsmen.	Pedlars.	Artisans.

		No. of		Amount of contribution in			
Workmen.	Slaves.	Human beings.	Domestic animals.	Cash.	Unpaid labour.	Tolls.	Fines.

5. Preparation of a census of families under the following heads:—

Serial no. of family.	No. of		No. of	
	Males.	Females.	Children.	Adults.

Village customs.	'Occupation' (income).	Expenditure.
------------------	------------------------	--------------

In connection with the above we are told in cryptic language that the *sthānika* is to superintend the fourth part of the kingdom 'in the same manner as the *gopa*.' Apparently he was expected to prepare similar registers of census records for the whole area comprised within this jurisdiction. We are lastly told, in the same connection that 'spies disguised as householders' should be sent to selected villages by the *samāhartā* for making the following kinds of inspection:—

1. Inspection of fields under the heads of area and output.

2. Inspection of houses under the heads of the revenue assessed (*bhoga*) and remissions (*parihāra*).
3. Inspection of families (*kulas*) under the heads of caste, occupation, number of residents,¹ income and expenditure.

The functions of the *gopas* described in the foregoing paragraphs may be fitly compared with those of the modern *pāṭwāries* ('village accountants'). Common to both is that

- (a) they are appointed not to single villages but to circles of varying extent ;
- (b) they are directed and controlled by superior ^{nt} revenue officers with wider jurisdictions ;
- (c) they are charged with keeping the village accounts in respect of the government revenue, with recording changes in ownership due to transfers, with keeping up-to-date field registers and with preparing various statistical returns.²

The *gopa*, however, was not only subject to the general control of the *samāhartā*, but the latter used a special means of checking his records by deputing inspectors to selected villages. Moreover the *gopa's* statistical returns went far beyond those of his modern counterpart, for he was entrusted with the preparations of very comprehensive census lists of the villages, including not only the caste, occupation, status and the like of the villagers, but also the amount of their income and expenditure. The two-fold census according to houses and according to families was apparently called for by

¹ *Jaṅghāgram* in the original, trans. as *Kopfzahl*, by M.; Gan. explains it as 'two-footed as well as four-footed creatures.'

² For full accounts of the *pāṭwāries'* duties, see Baden-Powell, *Land Systems*, Vol. II, pp. 278 ff., 512 ff., 734. These are conveniently summarised in the same author's *Land Revenue in British India* (2nd ed., pp. 28-29).

the fact that a number of families might live in the same house.¹

To complete the parallelism between the Kautilyan arrangement and the later methods of revenue assessment it may be mentioned that the *sthānika*'s charge (' $\frac{1}{4}$ th of the kingdom') which apparently formed the basis of the grand revenue-roll of the kingdom bears some resemblance to the later fiscal divisions called *parganās*. On the other hand, the *kānungoes* of the later system who were placed in charge of the *parganā* accounts appear from the above description to have their counterparts not in the *sthānikas*, but in the *samāhartā* who, as we have seen, is entrusted with the immediate direction and control of the *gopas* as well as the preparation of the revenue returns.

A careful consideration of the methods of records and statistical returns contemplated in the Arthaśāstra serves to show some striking anticipations of the later systems of revenue settlement in the earlier period. It is true that the methods of payment of the land-revenue in kind together with the almost complete absence of grades of proprietary rights in the Arthaśāstra must have contributed materially to the simplicity of the ancient system. It is, however, important to remember that the methods of survey and classification of soils must have formed at this period as in later times the essential preliminary of land revenue assessment. Evidence to this effect is furnished by the registers of the *gopas* containing the boundaries of the villages and the areas of the fields as well as the inspection reports of the spies specifying similarly the extent of the fields. Indeed the Arthaśāstra, elsewhere²

¹ Another link between the Arthaśāstra and later times is furnished by the fact that a census of houses was taken in Akbar's land-revenue system to complete the village records. The fee for this census was included in the list of *ābwābs* formally abolished by Aurangzeb in 1673 A. C. (Sarkar, *Mughal Administration*, p. 123).

² II, 6.

mentions under the class 'country-part' (*rāṣṭra*) a branch of revenue called *raju* ('ropes'). In its non-technical sense the term *raju* is a general land-measure consisting of ten *daṇḍas*, each *daṇḍa* ordinarily comprising four *aratnis* (otherwise called 'Prajāpati's hand'), i. e., 96 digits. As used in the technical fiscal sense it apparently refers to the unit of measure just mentioned applied for the purpose of cadastral survey, and the revenue from this source would perhaps consist of the cost of operations which was realised like the cost of settlement in modern times from the parties concerned.¹

The Kautilyan account of land-revenue assessment and collection described above is partly confirmed and partly supplemented by references in the literature of folklore. The *Kāma Jātaka*² mentions how a king's officers came to a village to measure the fields and the cultivators thereafter sought for remission of the revenue. The *Kurudhamma Jātaka*³

¹ See Kauṭ., II, 20. The difference between the *raju* and other land-measures mentioned by Kauṭ. in this chapter may be indicated in tabular form as follows:—

Name of measure.	Unit.
<i>Raju</i>	Hand of 24 digits.
Standard measure of pasture-lands	" " 28 "
" " camping-grounds	" " 42 "
" " forests and raw materials	" " 54 "
" " roads and wells	Unit of 108 digits.
" " <i>Brahmadeya</i> and charitable grants.	" 192 "

Similarly the *Āin-i-Ākbari* (tr. Blochmann and Jarett, Vol. II, pp. 58-59) mentions three kinds of the *Ilāhi Gaz* then current throughout Hindusthan, of which the long *Gaz* was used for the measurement of cultivated lands, the short *Gaz* was used for cloth, arms, chairs, carts, and so forth, while the middling was employed to measure buildings, etc.

² *Jāt.*, Vol. IV, p. 109.

³ Shorter version in the *Dhammapada* commentary (Bk. XXV, 2a), fuller version in the *Jātaka* commentary (Vol. III, p. 380).

mentions a group of eleven persons in the Kuru kingdom, who are renowned for practising "the Kuru righteousness." Among them are included :—

1. The *rajjugāhako amacco* (shortened into *rajju*ko), 'the rope-holding officer.' In the fuller version of the story he is described as measuring a field in primitive fashion by holding one end of a rope (*rajju*) tied to a stick, while the other end is held by the possessor of the field. Seeing a crab-hole at the point where he is about to pitch the stick, he reflects that if he should place it in front he would cause a loss to the king's revenue, while if he were to place it behind he would cause a loss to the householder.
2. The *setthi* ('merchant'). In the story he plucks out a handful of the ears of rice from his own field, when he reflects that he had still to pay the king's share (*bhāga*) and had unwillingly taken a handful of rice beforehand.
3. The *donamāpako* (shortened into *dono*), 'the measurer with the *drona* measure.' In the story he sits at the door of the royal granary causing the king's share to be measured, when owing to a sudden fall of rain he rushes indoors, throwing the grains he has used as markers into the heap of rice.

The above would seem to point to the following methods of assessment and collection of the land-revenue that were in vogue in ancient times :—

1. The fields were measured by the royal officers for the assessment of land-revenue. But a standard measure had not yet been brought into vogue. Sometimes the measurement was immediately followed by increase of assessment probably by disclosing plots not accounted for in the royal revenue-roll.

2. The land-revenue was apparently realised by the method of appraisement of the standing crops which is now called *kāṅkut*.
3. The king's grain-share was received at the State granary by an officer whose title shows that the *droṇa* was the unit of measurement.

Not only does the Arthaśāstra give us a classified list of the various branches of land-revenue and the principles of their assessment, but there may be detected in its description of the ordinary routine of administration as well as of State emergencies the outlines of a definite agricultural policy. The principal aim of this policy was to exploit the resources of the kingdom to the advantage of the State treasury without bearing harshly or even unkindly upon the cultivators. Thus in the above-mentioned chapter describing the measures for settlement of land we are told that villages consisting mostly of Śūdra cultivators should be founded at intervals of one or two *krośas*. This preference of an author of Kauṭilya's strong Brahminical predilections for Śūdra cultivators is doubtless explained by the fact that the latter were principally liable for payment of the land-revenue and similar charges. We are next told that the king should grant prepared fields to tax-payers (*karadas*) only as their personal property,¹ but must not take away unprepared fields from those who have made them fit for cultivation. In the immediately following lines Kauṭilya asks the king to confiscate the fields of those who have failed to cultivate them and grant them to other people or to the village labourers and pedlars. These rules evidently imply the king's right to dispose of lands under colonisation to the extent of limiting the duration of the grants to the life-time of the

¹ *Ekapuruṣīkam*, so explained by M.; the alternative expln. 'only for life' (Sh.) amounts to the same thing.

tenants ('tax-payers') and of evicting tenants who neglect to cultivate their assigned plots. But the tenants who have made the land fit for cultivation at their own cost are expressly guaranteed against eviction. We are next told that the tenants who are unable to cultivate their fields should pay a slight tax¹ and should be favoured with the grant of grain, cattle and cash. It is interesting to note that the provision of seeds and food to the cultivators as well as the advance of loans at the low rate of one per cent. is inculcated in the Mahābhārata² in the course of the sage Nārada's discourse to King Yudhiṣṭhira on Polity (*rājadharmā*). The general rule of the Arthasāstra in connection with the present point is sufficiently stringent. The king, we are told, should grant advances and remissions such as contribute to the increase of his treasury and avoid those that have a contrary tendency. For, as Kauṭilya says, the king with depleted treasury devours his own subjects. But the actual instances given by Kauṭilya indicate a more generous treatment of the cultivators. Thus in the present context the king is enjoined to grant remissions to the cultivators at the time of their settlement or else as they settle down.³ Elsewhere⁴ Kauṭilya mentions that the king is to advance grain, cattle, cash and the like to those who are colonising a tract of country and should purchase for cash $\frac{1}{4}$ of the grain after deducting the amount needed for seeds and provisions. Reverting to the earlier chapter⁵ we find the Arthasāstra inculcating remissions when the land is invaded by a hostile force or by forest marauders, or is afflicted with disease and famine. So also in

¹ The above follows the reading (*apahīnam*) and expl. of M. On the other hand Gaṇ. reads *avahīnam* and explains the passage to mean that those who have failed to cultivate the lands received by them should make good the loss. But this, though in keeping with other texts of Kauṭ. (II, 15; V, 2), involves a *hiatus* with the following sentence.

² II, 5. 76-78.

³ *Yathāgatukam* explained as above by Gaṇ.

⁴ V, 2.

⁵ II, I.

the chapter describing the measures for counteracting providential calamities¹ the king is asked to advance seeds and provisions, to open relief-works and perform the like functions during times of famine. A more general note is sounded in the injunction that the king is to protect agriculture against the oppressive burdens of fine, unpaid labour and taxes. Another important feature of the Kauṭilyan agricultural policy is the attention paid to the construction of reservoirs (*setu*) by the king or by others with his material assistance. Similarly in the above-mentioned discourse of Nārada in the Mahābhārata attention is drawn to the construction of large and full tanks, so that agriculture might not depend only upon the rainfall. The last point to be noted in connection with the Kauṭilyan policy is the strict control maintained by the State authorities over the lives of the tenants. Not only are the family duties to be enforced by means of fines, but gardens and places of recreation are forbidden to the cultivators, while the dancers, singers, actors and the like are expressly interdicted to them lest there be obstruction in the cultivation of lands.

Land-revenue in the Smṛtis.

When we turn to the section on polity (*rājadharma* and *nīti*) in the literature of Smṛtis, Epics and Purāṇas, we meet with descriptions of the branches of revenue which are neither so full nor so well arranged as those of the Arthaśāstra. We are, however, frequently able in this case to trace the sequence of development from crude to relatively advanced methods. In so far as the sources of land-revenue and similar charges in these works are concerned, they

¹ IV, 3.

may be conveniently summarised under the following heads :—

A. *Bali* (the king's grain-share).

The Arthaśāstra, as we have seen, distinguishes between *bhāga* and *bali*, taking the former to mean the king's grain-share and the latter some kind of additional cess. Our present sources, however, ignore the *bhāga* in its technical sense and apply the term *bali* to mean the king's grain-share.¹ The *bali* is fixed by Vas.² (under the generic designation of wealth) and by Viṣṇu³ at the uniform rate of $\frac{1}{6}$, while Gaut. mentions⁴ three distinct rates, viz., $\frac{1}{6}$, $\frac{1}{8}$ and $\frac{1}{10}$, no doubt, as the commentator remarks, with respect to good, intermediate and bad soils respectively. Manu similarly mentions⁵ three distinct rates of $\frac{1}{6}$, $\frac{1}{8}$ and $\frac{1}{12}$ from crops. In the *rājadharmā* section of the Mahābhārata the rate of the *bali* is repeatedly⁶ fixed as $\frac{1}{6}$, but its version of the origin of kingship shows⁷ that the lower rate of $\frac{1}{10}$ was traditionally held to have been originally in vogue. In the *rājadharmā* section of the Agnipurāṇa⁸ two distinct rates, namely $\frac{1}{6}$ and $\frac{1}{8}$ are mentioned for as many different kinds of paddy crops. In the above it is obvious that the rule permitting different rates for different qualities of soils or for different crops involved a more advanced principle of assessment than the rule in favour of a uniform rate.

¹ In the Pali Buddhist literature land-revenue is indicated by the terms *bali* and *bhāga*. For references, see P.T.S. Dict., s.v. *bali* and *bhāga*. The Sanskrit standard lexicons go a step further and frequently identify *bali*, *bhāga* and *kara* as synonymous terms. (For references see the writer's paper *Some Hindu Fiscal Terms Discussed*, loc. cit.) A text quoted in the great Jaina lexicon, *Abhidhānarājendra* (s. v. *kara*) mentions, in a list of 16 *karas*, the *kṣetrakara* which is defined as consisting of taxes of different kinds of the nature of *śulka* and so forth which are assessed upon fields.

² I, 42.

³ III, 22-23.

⁴ X, 24.

⁵ VII, 130.

⁶ *Ibid*, XII, 69. 25; 71. 10 ; etc.

⁷ XII, 67, 16-32.

⁸ CCXXIII, 26-27.

B. Miscellaneous Contributions from the Villages.

According to Vas.¹ the use of rivers, dry grass, forests, 'places of combustion'² and hills should be exempt from taxation, or in the alternative those who depend upon them for livelihood should pay something to the king. Here the use of rivers apparently refers to irrigation or fisheries, while dry grass, forests and places of combustion as well as hills may refer to the use of jungle products by the villagers. Gaut.³ enjoins the king to take $\frac{1}{6}$ of the roots, fruits, flowers, medicinal herbs, honey, flesh, grass and fire-wood, while he quotes⁴ the opinion of some to the effect that the king should take $\frac{1}{50}$ of cattle and the contribution in cash. In the later Smṛtis the above and other sources of revenue are all included in the regular body of the king's income. Thus Viṣṇu⁵ mentions the following schedule of taxes :—

- | | | |
|---|-----|----------------|
| 1. Meat, honey, clarified butter, medicinal herbs, scents, flowers, roots, fruits, flavouring substances, wood, leaves, skins, earthenware, stoneware and wicker-work ... | ... | $\frac{1}{6}$ |
| 2. Cattle, cash and clothes ... | ... | $\frac{1}{50}$ |

The list in Manu⁶ comprises all the items with the exception of clothes and the addition of grass. A somewhat variant list occurs in the Agnipurāṇa⁷ :—

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Cattle and contribution in cash ... | $\frac{1}{5}$ or $\frac{1}{6}$ (<i>sic</i>) |
| 2. Scents, medicinal herbs, flavouring substances, flowers, fruits, roots, leaves, grass, bamboo, skins, wicker-work and stoneware ... | $\frac{1}{5}$ or $\frac{1}{6}$ |
| 3. Honey, meat and clarified butter ... | $\frac{1}{6}$ |

¹ XIX, 26-27.

² *Dāha*, tr as above by Bühler on the authority of the commentator Nandapaṇḍita.

³ X, 27.

⁴ X, 25.

⁵ III, 25.

⁶ VII, 130-132.

⁷ CCXXIII, 27-29.

In the above list the contribution of $\frac{1}{30}$ of cattle apparently consisted of a periodical (probably annual) levy of this amount or value upon the agricultural live-stock of the cultivators. The Jaina text above-mentioned includes under the class 'taxes on things' (*dravyakara*) the charges imposed severally upon cows, buffaloes, camels, (other) domestic animals, she-goats and bullocks.¹ In the *Ain-i-Akbari*² the tax on cattle (*gāu shumāri*) and market dues on the sale of cattle are mentioned in a list of taxes abolished by Akbar. In Kashmir down to recent times every tenant had to pay to the State two annas per sheep for the privilege of grazing the animals on the mountain pastures.³ To the present time revenue terms in vogue in backward tracts of British India refer to the tax on cows and so forth.⁴

Turning to the next item, we may observe that the term *hiranya* (explained by us as 'contribution in cash') has been usually translated both in the present context and that of the ancient Indian land-grants as 'gold.'⁵ This translation, however, has been found to be so little satisfactory that various attempts have been made further to throw light upon

¹ The commentator understands these charges to mean taxes on sales of the animals concerned, payable either in kind or in cash.

² Thomas, *Revenue Resources of the Mughal Empire*, p. 17.

³ Lawrence, *The Valley of Kashmir*, p. 438.

⁴ Cf. the *Settlement Report of the District of Palamau*, 1913-1920, App. P., s.v. *bacchkar*, *bardancecha*.

⁵ Cf. the trs. of Bühler in S.B.E., Vol. II, p. 227; *ibid*, XXV, p. 237; Jolly, *ibid*, VII, p. 16; Shamasastry, *Arthaśāstra tr.*, 2nd ed., p. 173; Meyer, *Das Arthaśāstra des Kauṭilya*, p. 226. Also cf. the trs. of Fleet (*Gupta Inscrs.*, p. 124); R. D. Banerjee (*Ep. Ind.*, XIV, No. 23; *ibid*, XV, No. 18; etc.); D. R. Bhandarkar, *ibid*, VII, p. 46; N. G. Majumdar (*Inscrs. of Bengal*, Pt. III, pp. 8, 24, 67, 79, etc.). On the other hand *hiranya* is tr. as 'tax in money' by Senart (*Ep. Ind.*, VII, pp. 61-62), 'payment in money' by Kielhorn (*ibid*, p. 160) and 'tax in cash' by Vogel (*Antiquities of the Chamba State*, pp. 167-169).

its meaning. Thus it has been suggested¹ that it was a tax 'on the hoard or capital or on the annual income' (*sic*). A more desperate explanation that has been offered² is that it refers to the right of the State to the gold and probably other mines as well. Now this current interpretation of *hiranya* as gold may be shown to be untenable on the following grounds:—

(a) In the Smṛti texts above referred to *hiranya* is usually joined with *paśu* (domestic animals), and it occurs along with the crops, trees, roots, fruits, flowers, leaves, grass and so forth among the recognised sources of the king's revenue. It therefore evidently belonged to the group of taxes relating to the simple agricultural and industrial products of the village.

(b) In the land-grants *hiranya* is often conjoined³ with *bhāgabhogakara* which, as we shall see later on, has to be understood in the sense of the king's customary grain-share called *bhāga* in the Arthaśāstra and *bali* in the Smṛtis. In other cases⁴ it is joined with *dhānya* or the king's share of the crops. *Hiranya*, therefore, was a tax of the same nature as the king's grain-share which was paid in kind.

(c) It is extremely improbable for a State like that contemplated in the Smṛtis to draw part of its normal revenue from gold, whether we understand by it a tax on the accumulated hoard of the metal or a tax on the income estimated in gold currency.

The clue to the proper interpretation of *hiranya* is furnished by certain conditions of land-revenue prevalent in later times. In the mediæval period of Indian history while payments of the land-revenue before the revenue reform of

¹ N. C. Bandyopadhyaya, *Kauṭilya*, Vol. I, pp. 139-140.

² Beni Prasad, *The State in Ancient India*, p. 302.

³ Cf. Ep. Ind., Vol. I, No. 10, Vol. II, No. 23, Vol. III, No. 7, Vol. IV, No. 29, Vol. VII, No. 22, Vol. XIV, No. 13, etc.

⁴ Cf. Ep. Ind., Vol. I, No. 13, Vol. IV, No. 8, Vol. VI, No. 28, etc.

Todar Mall were made in kind, certain classes of crops (called by the title of *zabti*) were always assessed in cash on the ground that it was very difficult to divide them into shares.¹ It may be surmised that the ancient *hiranya* was a tax of this nature. It was, in other words, a tax in cash levied upon certain special kinds of crops as distinguished from the tax in kind which was charged upon the ordinary crops.

As regards the contribution of $\frac{1}{6}$ from scents, herbs, flowers, fruits, wood, roots, leaves and grass, parallels may be traced in the later literature as well as the actual practice of later times. The Jaina text above quoted mentions under the class taxes on things (*dravyakara*), the taxes levied severally upon grass, straw, chaff, wood and charcoal. To judge from later examples, it would seem that such taxes were levied not upon all classes of these articles but only upon the most valuable of them. In the Hindu State of Kashmir walnut-trees, fruit-trees and apricots were liable to taxation within comparatively recent times.² In some of the Hindu States of the Punjab the Government still exercises the right of ownership with respect to certain special kinds of trees.³ In many parts of British India the landlords in their private estates, and the Government in the Government-owned lands still exercise proprietary rights over certain valuable kinds of trees and grass. It is usual in such cases to charge a special tax (*dālkātti*) for lac grown on the *kusum* and *palās* trees. In the Kolhan Government Estate in the District of Singbhum myrobalans and *sābāi* grass even within the limits of the village jungle are controlled by the Forest Department. In the Orissa Tributary States *sābāi*

¹ See Baden-Powell, *Land Systems*, Vol. I, pp. 273-4. Cf. *Ain-i-Akbari*, Blochmann and Jarett's tr., Vol. II, p. 65; Forbes, *Rās Mālā*, p. 571.

² See Lawrence, p. 437.

³ Cf. *Punjab States Gazetteer*, Vols. VIIA, p. 26; XVIA, p. 73.

grass, skin and other products are annually leased out by the State to the contractors.¹

The contribution of $\frac{1}{5}$ upon meat, honey and clarified butter would evidently comprehend all the agricultural occupations of a simple village community, while the similar contributions upon earthenware, stoneware, wicker-work and clothes would comprise the whole stock of its manufacturing industry. Evidently the principle of taxation in this case was to leave no branch of the villagers' income, whether agricultural or industrial, free from the revenue assessment.²

C. Receipts from Embanked Reservoirs (setu).

Under the heading of Boundary Disputes the Smṛtis mention a rule of law showing how the advantages from reservoirs constructed by private parties sometimes went to the king. According to Yāj.³ when a person erects a *setu* in another's land without informing the owner thereof, the latter enjoys the advantage of its erection and in his absence the king. This explains the rule of Nārada,⁴ "If a man

¹ Other examples may be quoted from recent Settlement Reports. In Champaran and the neighbouring districts custom distinguishes two kinds of trees, the one belonging entirely to the landlord while in the case of the other half of the timber goes to the landlord and half to the *raiyat*. In Chota Nagpur the prevailing custom is that the timber of all trees except those planted by the *raiyat* is at the disposal of the landlord. See the Settlement Reports of Champaran (Patna, 1922), p. 38 ff., and of Kolhan Government Estate (Patna, 1920), p. 39 ff.

² Other taxes of the same nature for which no precise parallel can be found in the Smṛti and Epic lists are mentioned in the Jaina text above quoted. Such, *e.g.*, are the taxes on ploughs, the tax on the door-frames (*umbara*), the tax in lieu of the messengers' service (*jaṃghā*), the tax on plots and the tax on work (*karmakara*). The commentator understands the first to be payable in kind and the rest in cash.

³ II, 161. ⁴ XI, 20-21.

were to set in use a *setu*, erected before but thereafter deserted, without asking the owner's permission, he would not enjoy its advantage. But in the event of the owner's death and that of the heirs of his family he should first obtain the king's permission and then set the *setu* in operation." Evidently, then, in the case of embanked reservoirs where the ownership was lost (as in the case of other property which lapsed to the Crown for failure of heirs) the king was regarded as the rightful owner. With this provision of the Smṛtis we may well contrast the liberal rule of the Arthaśāstra¹ entitling the restorer of decayed or neglected lakes or reservoirs to remission for four years and the full right of sale and mortgage.

D. Additional Imposts : Perquisites to the Village Headman.

A passage of Manu,² while mentioning a list of the king's receipts, distinguishes between the terms *bali*, *kara*, *śulka*, *pratibhāga*, and *daṇḍa*. Of these the term *kara* is explained by the commentators in different senses, namely, (a) the receipts of commodities or the receipts in kind (Medhātithi),³ (b) the tax in cash payable on land (Sarvajñanārāyaṇa), (c) the king's dues paid at the military stations and so forth (Rāmachandra), (d) the tax payable by the inhabitants of villages and towns every month or according to the rule of payment in Bhādra, Pauṣa and other months (Kullūka) and (e) the tax payable by the inhabitants of villages every month (Rāghavānanda). The last two interpretations are very much in accordance with Bhaṭṭasvāmin's explanation of the term in the text of Kauṭilya above-mentioned.⁴ On

¹ III, 9.

² VIII, 307.

³ Contrast the tr. of Dr. Ganganath Jha, *Manusmṛti*, Vol. IV, Part II, p. 340, as 'what is paid in cash.' In the same context Jha renders *bali* loosely as 'tributes.'

⁴ See above, p. 36.

the other hand Medhātithi's explanation would seem to be tautologous in view of the inclusion of *pratibhāga* in the same list, while Kullūka's explanation is not supported by any independent evidence. *Kara* would thus be a periodical tax levied primarily, as it seems, upon agricultural land over and above the king's normal grain-share.¹ As to the term *pratibhāga* it is explained by Medhātithi in the sense of 'offerings of fruits and the like' and by Kullūka as 'offerings of fruits, flowers, roots, grains and the like.' With this may be compared the king's daily dues from the villages such as food, drink and fuel, which according to another text of Manu² the village headman ('the lord of one village') should receive as his perquisite.

As regards the revenue-free lands, Yāj. while laying down the procedure for royal grants, has in view³ the grant of lands (*bhūmi*) as well as assignment of revenue (*nibandha*). As this rule is laid down for the benefit of the king, the commentator Vijñāneśvara understands it to mean that the governor of a district (*bhogapati*) has no right to grant lands or assign the revenue.

¹ It may be noticed here that a text quoted in the great Jaina lexicon (*s. v. gāmāgāra*) mentions that while villages were liable to the *kara*, the towns were immune from the same.

² VII, 118. It may be added that the Agnipurāṇa, CCIII, 2, applies the term *bhoga* to the perquisites of the officers in charge of 1, 10 and 100 villages as well as the governor of the district. For *pratibhāga* Sarvajñanārāyaṇa and Rāghavānanda have the reading *pratibhoga*, Govindarāja has *bhūtibhoga* and Nandana has *prītibhoga*. The first of these alternative readings with the variant *prātibhoga* is explained in the *Kalpadrakoṣa* of Keśava (Baroda, 1928) in the practically identical sense of presents of vegetables and so forth (*ibid.*, p. 102).

³ I, 318. The commentator Aparārka defines *nibandhas* as involving the arrangement that so much is to be paid for each field by its owner to such a one in such a village during every month or every year.

Land Revenue and Miscellaneous Charges in the Śukranīti.

As a fitting sequel to our description of the land-revenue system of the Arthaśāstra and the Smṛtis, we may mention the arrangements devised for the same in the late mediæval work on Polity called the Śukranīti.¹ It lays down, to begin with, the following rates of the king's grain-share :—

- | | |
|--|---------------|
| 1. Lands depending upon rivers (<i>i.e.</i> , river-irrigated lands) | $\frac{1}{2}$ |
| 2. Lands depending upon tanks and wells (<i>i.e.</i> , tank-irrigated lands) | $\frac{1}{3}$ |
| 3. Lands depending upon rain water (<i>i.e.</i> , un-irrigated lands) | $\frac{1}{4}$ |
| 4. Barren land 'filled with stones and the like' | $\frac{1}{6}$ |

The enhanced rates of the above list as compared with those of the preceding systems are undoubtedly to be explained in the light of the later times to which it refers. In the same context we are told that the occupation of the cultivator is the best where he makes a profit of twice the amount of the king's dues and the like. In other words $\frac{1}{3}$ of the net produce was held to be the highest legitimate share of the king. Besides the above the Śukranīti refers to the usual tax in cash. As the king, we are told, receives a tax (*rājabhāga*) of 100 silver *karṣas* from the cultivators, he should make over $\frac{1}{20}$ of his share to them. Unfortunately this somewhat ambiguous text fails to mention what unit of land was assessed to the tax of 100 silver coins. The Śukranīti, moreover, mentions the taxes upon cattle and upon the produce of the village jungle that are well known to the Smṛtis. The schedule of rates is as follows :—

- | | |
|---|----------------|
| 1. Gatherers of dry grass, wood, etc. | $\frac{1}{20}$ |
| 2. Increments of goats, sheep, cattle and horses | $\frac{1}{8}$ |
| 3. Milk of buffaloes, goats, sheep and cows | $\frac{1}{16}$ |

¹ IV, 2. 120 ff.

In connection with the last point it is mentioned that the milk required for the house-holders is exempt from taxation.

Some light is thrown upon the methods of land-revenue assessment and collection in the Śukranīti by a few other texts in the same connection. The king, it is declared,¹ should assess the land-revenue (*bhāga*) after causing the lands to be classified according to their fertility and measured according to their extent. Elsewhere² we are told that the measures of length like the measures of size and capacity should be marked with the king's seal. This evidently implies a system of land measurement according to the standard measure and of classification of soils forming the basis of the revenue assessment. As regards the collection of the land-revenue the Śukranīti³ seems to introduce the innovation of a middleman. The king, we learn in one place, is to issue revenue writs marked with his own seal to each cultivator. He is to receive the revenue from a selected rich man after taking a security from him or by accepting the equivalent sum in lump or from month to month or from season to season. In this important passage is evidently contained a reference to the use of the farming system under a class of zemindars.

The Śukranīti follows the general trend of agricultural policy that is laid down in the Hindu technical literature on Polity. It advocates, for instance, remissions of the land-revenue for improvements and reclamations. No tax (*bhāga*), we are told in one place,⁴ should be assessed upon persons who improve the lands by the construction of tanks, artificial water-courses and the like, as well as those who bring fresh land under cultivation, until they have earned twice their outlay.

¹ *Ibid.*, 112.

² I, 309.

³ IV, 2. 124-125.

⁴ *Ibid.*, 121-122.

CHAPTER III

THE SOURCES OF REVENUE (CONTINUED) : TOLLS, TRANSIT DUTIES, CUSTOMS AND THE LIKE

Tolls and Duties in the Arthaśāstra.

We propose to consider in the present chapter the sources of revenue consisting of the tolls or rather octroi duties, the transit charges, the customs and so forth. In the Arthaśāstra, which as usual contains the fullest account, the group of charges under this head falls under two distinct classes :—

- (a) the fortified city (*durga*), and
- (b) the country-part (*rāṣṭra*).

Under the class 'fortified city,' the Arthaśāstra¹ includes *inter alia* the following five items :—

1. *śulka* ('tolls,' or rather 'octroi duties'),
2. *dvārādeya* ('gate-dues'),
3. *surā* ('liquor'),
4. *pautavam* (weights and measures),
5. *paṇyasaṁsthā* ('market').

As regards the *śulka* and the *dvārādeya*, Kauṭilya mentions,² in the course of his description of the functions of the Superintendent of tolls (*śulkādhyakṣa*), that tolls (*śulka*) both for import and export are to be levied upon goods produced in the country-part and the capital city as well as those brought from outside the kingdom.³ The rate of the duty upon

¹ II, 6.-

² II, 21.

³ *Bāhyamābhayaantarañchātithyam*, taken as above by Bhaṭṭ., followed by Sh. and Gaṇ. and by M. in amended tr., pp. 712-713.

imported goods in general is declared to be $\frac{1}{2}$ of the value,¹ but a distinct schedule of rates is laid down for specific classes of goods as follows:—

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Flowers, fruits, vegetables,
roots, seeds, dried fish
and meat ... | $\frac{1}{6}$ |
| 2. Conchshells, diamonds,
jewels, pearls, corals,
necklaces ... | Rate to be fixed by
experts according to
the work involved, the
amount of merchandise,
the time required for
its manufacture, the
wages paid and the
disposal of the product. ² |
| 3. Linen, silk and specified
kinds of cloth, metals,
sandal and similar other
articles, wines, ivory,
skins and some other
specified articles ... | $\frac{1}{10}$ or $\frac{1}{15}$ |
| 4. Clothes, animals, slaves,
thread, cotton, scents,
medicines, wood, grains,
oils, sugar, salt, liquors
and other specified
articles ... | $\frac{1}{20}$ or $\frac{1}{25}$ |

¹ V. Smith, *Early History* (4th ed., p. 150) understands the Arthaśāstra to mean that "imports from abroad paid as a rule seven distinct taxes aggregating about 20%," but there is no authority for this statement.

² The above follows the translation of M. which differs from the explanation of Gan.

In addition to the above a charge called 'gate-dues' is to be levied amounting to $\frac{1}{2}$ of the *śulka*, but a rebate of the same is allowed according to the circumstances of the case and the usefulness of the article concerned.¹

A careful consideration of the above reveals the following notable features of the Arthaśāstra system of tolls. In the first place the duties are levied not in kind but in cash, evidently after valuation by appraisers. Special experts were engaged for the valuation of the precious substances. In the second place duties on a diminishing scale are levied for three classes of articles which may be conveniently described as consisting of perishable articles, valuable products and ordinary commodities. Such elaborate arrangements evidently indicate a somewhat advanced stage of development of the branch of revenue concerned.

While on the subject of the *śulka* mention may be made of another kind of income accruing to the king at the toll-house under the prevalent arrangements for the sale of merchandise in the same place. When the price is raised owing to the mutual competition among buyers, says Kāuṭilya, the excess along with the *śulka* should go into the king's treasury. Again, we are told that when the price is raised above the proper rate of the merchandise by one buyer out of rivalry with another, the king should appropriate the excess or else levy a fine amounting to twice the *śulka*. Evidently the prices were fixed by State regulation (an

¹ Here again I follow the translation of Meyer who differs from Gan. In the concluding verse of II, 22 Kāuṭ. states that the tolls as well as penal fines should be levied upon new and old merchandise according to the local and popular usage. This seems to suggest that different rates of duties were levied for old and new articles of the same kind. Megasthenes, as we shall see later on, while describing the administration of the imperial city of Pataliputra under the Mauryas, mentions that new goods were required to be sold apart from the old goods.

express rule to this effect is given in the Arthaśāstra, IV, 2), and any enhancement of the prescribed rate was held liable to confiscation by the king.

It is interesting to observe that the rule just mentioned relating to the king's confiscation of the extra price of merchandise is perpetuated in the literature on the Sacred Law and Polity. According to a verse of Hārīta quoted by the commentator on the Nītivākyāmṛtam¹ when the price of merchandise is determined by competition and when it is increased beyond the prescribed rate the increase should go to the king. According to another verse from Nārada quoted by the same authority,² when the merchandise is given away for a small sum by robbers and so forth, it should go wholly to the king, but the purchaser should get back the purchase-money. The text of the Nītivākyāmṛtam just mentioned combines both the above points. According to it the increase in price arising from the competition should go to the king and the proper price to the seller, while the merchandise of high value that is sold for a small consideration should go to the king without prejudice to the purchase-money.

A word may be added in the present place regarding the arrangements for the collection of the *śulka* in the Arthaśāstra which indicate a remarkably advanced stage of administrative organisation. The Arthaśāstra³ contemplates the collection of tolls upon imports and exports by an officer called the Superintendent of tolls at the toll-house. The Superintendent, we are told, should erect a toll-house with its distinctive flag near the principal gate of the city. When the caravans arrive at the place, four or five toll-collectors are to put down in writing their names and residence, the amount of their merchandise and the station of affixing the official stamp. Appropriate penalties ranging from a fine to a short

¹ VIII, 18.

² *Ibid.*, 19.

³ II, 21.

imprisonment are laid down for omission of, or forging or tampering with, the stamp. For understating the amount and value of the merchandise out of apprehension of the charge for tolls as well as for fraudulent concealment of the valuable merchandise, other appropriate penalties, *viz.*, fines of eight times the value of the *śulka* or confiscation of the merchandise, are prescribed. The Arthaśāstra, moreover, provides for the sale of merchandise at the toll-house at the prescribed price. After the merchandise has been brought down to the foot of the toll-house flag, says Kauṭilya, the pedlars should proclaim their amount and value and ask for the bidders. When the proclamation had been made thrice, it is to be made over to the bidders, the increase in price due to competition being confiscated by the king. Doubtless to facilitate the collection of the toll the general rule is laid down that no merchandise is to be sold at the place of its origin. This is accompanied by a list of penalties for removing mining products from mines, flowers and fruits as well as roots and vegetables from the gardens and all crops from the fields.

The above arrangements must have tended to secure at the cost of an excessive degree of State interference the proper collection of the government revenue together with the protection of the purchasers according to the current ideas of the time. It is, however, important to observe that they at the same time must have ensured to the traders the advantage which is now sought to be obtained from the system of bonded warehouses, *viz.*, that of payment of the duty at the time of the sale. The Arthaśāstra moreover presents in the same context the outlines of what may be called a tariff policy which is marked, so far as it goes, by moderation and good sense. A large number of articles, for example, is altogether exempted from the tolls; these include articles required for marriages, or for a bride going to her husband's place, or for presentation, or for performance of sacrifice, for worship of

the gods, for the ceremony of investiture with the sacred thread and so on. On the other hand the exportation of a number of prohibited articles is punished with fines and confiscation of the merchandise: these include weapons, skins, armour, base metals, chariots, jewels, grain and cattle. In fine the general rule is laid down that whatever merchandise is a source of affliction to the kingdom and is unproductive should be destroyed, while seeds which are difficult to procure and productive of great benefit should be allowed free of toll.

Let us now turn to another branch of revenue included under the present head, *viz.*, the income from liquors (*surā*). In the above-mentioned list of articles subject to the *śulka* it will be noticed that liquors (*surā*) are included in a class of goods paying a duty of $\frac{1}{10}$, while intoxicants (*madya*) are included in another class paying a duty of $\frac{1}{20}$ or $\frac{1}{25}$. The term *surā*, however, occurs as an independent branch of revenue under the class 'fortified city' in the classified list of constituents of the king's income.¹ The meaning of this revenue term may be discovered from Kautīlya's description of the functions of the Superintendent of liquors (*surā-dhyakṣa*).² The Superintendent, we are told, should arrange for the manufacture of spirituous drinks and leavening stuff as well as for their traffic within the fortified city, the country-part and the camp. The sale is to be concentrated in one place or carried on simultaneously in many places or arranged otherwise according to convenience. A heavy penalty of 600 silver coins (*paṇas*) is prescribed for those who manufacture or buy or sell it elsewhere and the carrying of liquor out of the village or the house is forbidden. This drastic regulation is sought to be justified on the ground that those engaged in performing their work would otherwise be obstructed, and the Aryan standard

¹ Kaut., II, 6.

² *Ibid.*, II, 25.

of good conduct would be violated. While the drinking shop is required to be made attractive to the customers, rules are laid down for limiting the quantity of sale. On the other hand it is declared that on occasions of festivals and social gatherings (*śamājas*) a general license should be given to drink wine without limit for 4 days, but those who receive the license for the sale of liquors have to pay a daily fine terminating with the festival.¹ In this connection we are told that a duty (*śulka*) of five per cent. should be charged upon such liquors as are not royal merchandise and a 'compensation-fee' (*vaidharana*) as well as indemnity-fee (*vyāṇi*) should be charged upon the same after inspection of the daily sale.

It would seem from the above that the following revenues were derived from the sale of liquors :—

1. Proceeds of sale of liquors manufactured by the State.
2. Charges imposed upon private manufacturers in the city consisting of the following items:—

- (a) Duty (*śulka*) of 5 per cent.,
- (b) Indemnity-fee,
- (c) 'Compensation-fee' apparently assessed upon the net profit which is found to be left after inspection of the daily sale.

3. Tolls (*śulka*) imposed upon the imported liquors and intoxicants.

It now remains to notice two other classes of revenue belonging to the present category, *viz.*, the 'weights and measures' (*pautavam*) and the 'market' (*panyasamsthā*). As to the first item the Arthaśāstra introduces us in its chapter on Weights and Measures² to various balances and measures of capacity. Among the former are included the *āyamānī* by which the

¹ I follow the tr. of M. in preference to the reading and interpretation of Gaṇ.

² Kaut., II, 19.

king's receipts are weighed, which weighs 100 *dharaṇapalas*¹ unlike the balance for general use which weighs only 95 *dharaṇapalas*. Among the latter are comprised the *āyamāna*, the measure for the king's receipts, which weighs 200 *palas* of paddy beans, unlike the measure for general use which weighs only $187\frac{1}{2}$ such units. In the same context we are told that except with regard to meat, base metals, salt and jewels an excess of 5 per cent. is to be given to the purchaser when the articles are weighed in the balances called *samavṛttā* and *parimāṇī*. We are further told that the compensation-fee for heated articles should be on the following scale :—

1. Clarified butter	...	...	$\frac{1}{32}$
2. Oil	...	...	$\frac{1}{64}$
3. Liquids	...	...	$\frac{1}{50}$

If it be supposed that some of the king's receipts consisting of the aforesaid articles were weighed in the balances above mentioned, this will involve some additional kind of income for the State treasury. Another kind of income is indicated in the same chapter by the rule that traders are to pay a punching or stamping fee (*prāṭivedhanikam*) every four months at the rate of one *kākaṇṭ* every day to the Superintendent of weights and measures.²

As to the revenue term 'market,' the Arthaśāstra mentions in one place³ an officer called Superintendent of the

¹ A unit of weight which according to the commentator is greater than the usual *pala* unit of weight by one *karṣa*, i.e., $\frac{1}{4}$ *pala*.

² I follow Gaṇ.'s reading *chaturmāsikam* instead of *chaturmāṣakam* of the text of Sh. and M. and *chaturmāṣikam* of Jolly—Schmidt. An interesting example of this kind of revenue in later times is the tax on stone weights (i.e., the tax levied on the weights at the time of fixing the official stamp), which was abolished by the Emperor Aurangzeb in 1623 A.C. (Sarkar, *Mughal Administration*, p. 123).

³ Kauṭ., IV, 2.

market (*saṁsthādhyakṣa*) who has to supervise the sale and mortgage of old merchandise at the market, and another officer called the Superintendent of merchandise (*paṇyādhyakṣa*) who has to fix the prices of various articles. In this connection fines of varying amounts are prescribed for deficiency in weights and measures, for various frauds perpetrated on the buyers, for conspiracy for the enhancement of prices, for transgression of the price fixed by State regulation and so forth. Probably all these items went to swell the class of revenue collectively called 'market' by Kauṭilya.

Of the branches of revenue falling under the present head which Kauṭilya includes in the class 'country-part' the following may be specially mentioned:—

1. 'Merchant' (*vaṇik*).
2. 'The warden of rivers' (*nadīpāla*).
3. 'The ferry' (*tara*).
4. 'Boats' (*nāvah*).
5. 'Port' (*paṭṭanam*).
6. 'Transit duties' (*varttanī*).

A sufficient light is thrown upon these heads of revenue by Kauṭilya's description of the functions of the Superintendent of boats.¹ The Superintendent, we are told, should supervise the track of sea-going ships, the navigation of the mouths of rivers, as well as the ferries over the natural and artificial lakes and the rivers. In this connection it is mentioned that the villages bordering on the sea as well as those situated on the banks of rivers and the lakes should pay a fixed tax (*kṛipta*). Evidently this tax was regarded as a return for the services rendered by the Superintendent of boats. We are next told that the fishermen should pay $\frac{1}{8}$ of their haul as boat-hire,² merchants (*vaṇik*) should pay a duty

¹ II, 28.

² The alternative reading *nuukāhātakam* ('fishing license') in Sh.'s ed. is rightly rejected by Gan. and M.

tolls.¹ There we are told that the boundary-officer (*antapāla*) who, as we learn elsewhere,² was in charge of the fortresses on the frontier, should levy the transit duties at the following rates :—

1. One cart	...	...	$\frac{1}{4}$ <i>paṇa</i> (silver coin)
2. One single-hoofed animal	...	...	1 <i>paṇa</i>
3. One large animal	...	...	$\frac{1}{2}$ <i>paṇa</i>
4. One small animal	...	...	$\frac{1}{4}$ <i>paṇa</i>
5. One shoulder-load	...	...	1 <i>māṣa</i>

To complete the list of charges mentioned under the present head we may refer to two other passages of the Arthaśāstra mentioning the various items of expenditure incurred by the traders. In the first passage³ the Superintendent of merchandise (*paṇyādhyakṣa*) of whom we shall hear more presently, is required to estimate the profit left after meeting the following charges :—tolls (*śulka*), transit duties (*varttanī*), escorting fees (*ātivāhika*), fees paid at the military or police stations (*gulmadeya*), ferry duties (*taradeya*), the cost of provisions and the king's share.⁴ In the second passage⁵ spies disguised as merchants are required to ascertain for merchandise of foreign origin the expenses on account of tolls, transit duties, escorting fees, fees payable at the military stations and at ferries, the king's share, the cost of provisions and the rent of the warehouse. A perusal of the above list points to two new items of revenue not accounted for so far, *viz.*, the fees paid at the military or police stations and the king's share.

¹ II, 21.

² II, 1.

³ *Ibid.*, II, 16 : *śulkavarttanyātivāhikagulmataradeyabhaktabhāga-vyayaśuddhamudayam paśyēt.*

⁴ The above follows M.'s reading (and tr.) of *bhāga* instead of *bhātaka* of Gaṇ. In the very similar list referred to above Gaṇ. reads *bhāga* which he, however, explains in the sense of 'share payable to the partners.'

⁵ Kauṭ., II, 35.

Summing up the above account we may notice the following branches of revenue included in the Arthaśāstra under the present heading :—

1. The fixed tax charged upon the villages situated on the sea-shore and on the banks of lakes and rivers. The last-named charge may be probably identified with the revenue term 'Warden of Rivers' (*nadī-pāla*), Arthaśāstra, II, 6.
2. Duty (*śulka*) levied upon merchants at the ports as well as elsewhere. The first probably corresponds to the revenue term 'port' (*paṭṭanam*) and the second to the term merchant (*vaṇik*) of the Arthaśāstra list.
3. ~~Sea and river customs~~ (*śulka*) levied by the ferrymen and inland customs (*śulka*) levied by the boundary officer at the frontiers.
4. Ferry charges (*tara*) according to a specified schedule of rates: these correspond to the 'ferry' (*tara*) of the Arthaśāstra list.
5. Transit duties, escorting fees, and fees payable at the military or police stations. The first may be identified with the revenue-term 'transit duty' (*varṭtanī*) of the list in Arthaśāstra, II, 6.
6. Hires for royal boats paid by fishermen and those engaged in conchshell and pearl fisheries. With these may be identified the revenue term 'boats' of the Arthaśāstra list.
7. The king's share (*bhāga*).

Before leaving the present subject we may mention the revenue-term 'trade-route' (*vaṇikpatha*) described as an independent class of revenue in the Arthaśāstra list (II, 6). A clue to its identification is probably furnished by Kāuṭilya's description of the functions of an officer called the

Superintendent of merchandise (*panyādhyakṣa*).¹ The Superintendent, we are told, should inform himself of the value and currency of the different kinds of merchandise imported by the land-route and the water-route. The Superintendent, moreover, should take into account, evidently for purpose of trading, various specified items concerning the merchandise carried by 'water' and by rivers. In the same context Kauṭilya requires the Superintendent to concentrate the traffic in royal merchandise of indigenous origin and distribute the traffic in merchandise of foreign origin. In the alternative the royal merchandise may be sold at a fixed price at many places, in which case the vendors have to pay the following charges :—

1. Compensation-fee (*vanīkaraṇa*) which should be proportionate to the loss suffered by the king's treasury,
2. Compensation-fee (*vyājī*) to the extent of 10 on those sold by weight and 11 on those sold by counting.

With regard to the king's own territory Kauṭilya mentions in the same connection the procedure for the daily sale of the merchandise by salesmen under the direction of the *panyādhyakṣa*. As regards the foreign countries the Superintendent is required to ascertain whether any profit is left after meeting the expenses on account of the merchandise and to arrange the sale accordingly.

The above seems to point to a systematic arrangement for State trading of which the profits undoubtedly went to the king's treasury. A few examples of royal merchandise forming the subject of such trading may be here mentioned. In the chapter relating to mines and mining works² the Superintendent of mines is required to arrange for manufacture of the ores in the State workshops and for sale of the manufactured

¹ II, 16.

² II, 12.

product. In another chapter¹ the Superintendent of raw materials is required to carry on manufactures of the various products such as are needed for defence of the capital and for means of livelihood. In yet another place² the Superintendent of gold is required to construct a workshop (*akṣaśālā*) for gold and silver manufactures.

Tolls and charges upon merchants in the Smṛtis.

Let us now turn from the Arthaśāstra to the literature of the Sacred Law (Smṛti). Here we find that the items of revenue belonging to the class of tolls and the like are of the following kinds :—

1. Tolls (*śulka*),
2. Tax on merchants (*kara*),
3. Punching or stamping fees upon weights and measures,
4. Ferry-charges and boat-hire.

As regards the tolls or customs duties references in the Smṛtis and the Purāṇas unlike the Arthaśāstra enable us to trace a gradual evolution from crude to more advanced methods of assessment. In its primitive form it occurs in Gaut.³ where we are told that the king should take a duty of $\frac{1}{20}$ of the merchandise along with one article every month at less than the market rate. A similar rule, if we are to trust a quotation of the commentator on Gaut.⁴ occurs in Brhaspati. Here it is evident that the duty which is assessed at a uniform rate is levied in kind, while the king's exaction of one article every month is undoubtedly a reminiscence of the ancient custom of direct contribution from the merchants.⁵ A some-

¹ II, 17.

² II, 13.

³ X, 26 ; *ibid*, 35.

⁴ See Maskarin's comm. on Gaut., X, 34.

⁵ A historical parallel may be found in the early English custom of the 'prise' upon merchants which preceded the system of the customs duties. Cf. N. S. B. Gras, *The Early English Customs System*, pp.15-21.

what more advanced stage is marked by the rule of Baudh.,¹ according to whom the king should take for goods imported by sea a duty of ten *panas* in the hundred together with a choice article, and for other commodities duties varying according to their intrinsic value, but not the choice article.² With this may be compared the rule of Viṣṇu³ according to whom the king's portion of *śulka* should be—

$\frac{1}{10}$ of the merchandise of his own country.

$\frac{1}{20}$ of the merchandise of foreign countries.

In the latter case we have not a single uniform rate but two distinct rates of duties, one (properly called tolls) being levied upon internal goods, and the other (strictly called customs duties) being assessed upon foreign goods. In the former case we have one rate for goods imported by sea together with *ad valorem* rates for other goods. What is more, Baudh. evidently understands this duty, as is indicated by his expression 'ten *panas* in the hundred,' to be assessed in cash evidently after appraisement by experts.

The metrical Smṛtis, while reverting to the uniform rate of Gaut., imply assessment of the duty upon the money value of the commodity concerned. Thus according to Manu⁴ the king should take—

$\frac{1}{20}$ of that which persons having experience of toll-houses and skilled in estimating the value of all kinds of merchandise may fix as the value for each commodity.

¹ I, 10. 18. 14-15.

² *Anupahatya* in the original, explained as above by the commentator Govindasvāmin (Mysore ed., p. 124). Bühler translates it (S. B. E., XIV, p. 200) as 'without oppressing the traders.'

³ III, 29-30.

⁴ VIII, 398.

Very similar is the rule of Yāj.¹ according to whom the king may take a duty of—

$\frac{1}{20}$ of the value estimated by the (royal officers).

A variant of the above rule, reminding one of Viṣṇu's differential rates for internal and foreign goods, occurs in the *rājadharma* section of the Agnipurāṇa² according to which the king may take—

$\frac{1}{20}$ of internal merchandise and for foreign merchandise as much as would leave the trader a profit of $\frac{1}{20}$.

The precise nature of the above-mentioned duty, in the absence of clear explanations about its meaning, has been the occasion for some controversy in later times :

1. Vijñāneśvara, commenting upon the text of Yāj. quoted above, takes it to mean that the king should take $\frac{1}{20}$ of the price as fixed by himself. This interpretation, however, is disproved by the fact that the State regulation of prices is mentioned by our authorities in a separate context, while Nārada³ like the Arthaśāstra expressly contemplates the merchants as paying the duty (*śulka*) at the toll-house,
2. In connection with the above-mentioned text of Manu while some commentators⁴ take it to refer to $\frac{1}{20}$ of the amount of the merchandise, others⁵ refer it to $\frac{1}{20}$ of the profit derived from the same. Mitramiśra in his well-known Digest called the Rājanītiprakāśa⁶ follows the latter interpretation, and adds that although the text of Manu refers to $\frac{1}{20}$ of the value of the commodity, it should be interpreted to refer

¹ II, 266.

² CCXXIII, 23-24.

³ IV, 12.

⁴ *Viz.*, Meśhātithi and Sarvajñanārāyaṇa.

⁵ *Viz.*, Govindarāja, Kullūka and Rāghavananda.

⁶ *Ibid*, p. 164.

to $\frac{1}{20}$ of the excess on the principal; for if the king were to take $\frac{1}{20}$ of the principal, the merchant would be ruined. It is evident that in the former sense alone the tax would amount to a duty properly so called, while in the latter sense it would be a tax upon profits. The correctness of the former interpretation is vouched for by a reference to the parallel system of the Arthasāstra and by the independent mention of a tax on merchants' profits (*kara*) in the Smṛtis.

The rules of the Smṛtis regarding the administration of the *śulka* and the policy of its collection correspond as far as they go to the system of the Arthasāstra. Thus Manu¹ and Yāj.² prescribe a fine of eight times the amount of the duty upon persons evading the *śulka*, or understating the value of their merchandise. In thorough accord with the Arthasāstra again the Smṛtis³ forbid, on pain of confiscation of the whole merchandise, the exportation of what is proclaimed as suited for the king's use and of what is forbidden to be taken out of the country.⁴

Let us now turn to another class of taxes levied upon the merchants. While the Arthasāstra understands *kara* in the technical sense to mean a kind of 'benevolence' levied upon traders of various classes, the Smṛtis take it to be a normal tax upon merchants. According to Manu⁵ the king should

¹ Manu, VIII, 400.

² II, 262.

³ Manu, VIII, 399; cf. Yāj., II, 262.

⁴ As examples of goods proclaimed for the king's use, Medhātithi mentions elephants in the Eastern countries, saffron, silks and woollens in Kashmir, horses among the Western countries and precious stones, pearls, etc., among the Southern countries. Medhātithi further illustrates the class of goods whose export is forbidden by the king by the example of crops during famine. This evidently points to a policy of prohibition of export of food-grains as a measure of famine-relief.

⁵ VII, 127.

levy taxes (*kara*) upon merchants after carefully examining the affairs relating to purchase and sale, the distance travelled, the provisions consumed and the charges for protection.¹ This rule occurs practically in the same form in a discourse upon Polity in the *Mahābhārata*,² both authorities probably deriving it from the same source. It is evident that the particular tax here mentioned is an impost upon the net profits of the merchants.³

Turning to the next branch of revenue under the present head, we may mention that the *Smṛtis* apparently contemplate, like the *Arthaśāstra*, a tax to be derived from weights and measures. This is apparently referred to in a corrupt text of *Vas.*⁴ which has not been properly explained. More explicit is the rule of *Manu*⁵ according to whom all weights and measures must be well examined (*i.e.*, according to the commentator, must be stamped with the royal mark), and they should be re-examined once in every six months. Comparison with the parallel rule of the *Arthaśāstra* suggests that this examination was made an occasion for collection of a small punching-fee.

The next group of charges in the *Smṛtis* to which we have to turn our attention has its precise parallel in the system of the *Arthaśāstra*. Thus *Manu*⁶ mentions

¹ *Yogakṣema*, explained by *Medhātithi* as charges for protection against robbers during journeys through forests, is taken by *Kullūka* to include the net profits as well. In either case the nature of the tax, as explained below, remains the same.

² XII, 87. 13a-14b.

³ With the above may be mentioned 'the trifling annual tax' (*kara*) which *Manu*, VII, 187 requires the king to levy upon the ordinary inhabitants of his kingdom who live by traffic.

⁴ XIX, 14-15.

⁵ VIII, 403.

⁶ VIII, 404-406.

ferry charges (*tārya* or *tārika*) according to the following scale :—

1.	An (empty) cart	...	...	...	1 <i>pana</i>
2.	A man's load	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{2}$ „
3.	An animal and a woman	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{4}$ „
4.	A man without load...	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{8}$ „
5.	Empty vessels and men without luggage	...	...	...	A trifle.

For long distances along the banks of rivers the fare (*tara*) should be proportioned to the distance and duration of the journey, while no settled charge is prescribed for the journey on sea. The above text, it is true, does not expressly mention whether the State boats or the private boats are here in question, but the context in which it occurs and the analogy of the Arthaśāstra rule permit us to refer it with confidence to the former.¹

To complete this part of our survey we may mention the description of the tolls and duties (*śulka*) in the late mediæval work on Polity called the Śukranīti.² There *śulka* is first defined as the king's share which is realised from the vendor as well as the purchaser. We are then told that it should be imposed by the king upon all objects only once, but should on no account be levied more than once. This was evidently made to guard against the danger of multiplication of *śulka* upon the same objects. The king, Śukra goes on, is to levy a *śulka* of $\frac{1}{32}$ or $\frac{1}{20}$ or $\frac{1}{16}$ from the vendor or the purchaser so as not to offend against the selling price (*mūlyāvi-rodhakam*). What this means is explained in the following

¹ In connection with the ferry charges of the Smṛtis we may mention that Yāj. (II, 263) prescribes a fine for the ferryman (*tārika*) who collects the inland (*sthala*) *śulka*. This suggests two different agencies for the collection of the tolls and the ferry charges.

² IV, 2. 108-111.

passage where it is declared that the *śulka* should not be collected from the vendor when the selling price is less than the cost or equal to it, but may be certainly collected from the purchaser when there is a profit. It will be noticed that of the three distinct grades mentioned by *Sukra* only the rate of $\frac{1}{20}$ is known to the *Smṛtis*. Elsewhere¹ the *Śukranīti* refers, although with disparagement, to the system of State trading which we have already met with in the *Arthaśāstra*. Of its three grades of kings, namely, the good, the intermediate and the bad, it declares the intermediate king to be one who lives by the occupation of a *Vaiśya* (that is, by trade, agriculture and so forth).²

Let us try to discover how far the references in the general literature to the system of tolls and the like help to corroborate or supplement the account given above. *Pāṇini*³ lays down the rule for the formation of words relating to transactions in which and the persons to whom the *śulka* is paid. But it is not without significance that the standard commentaries as well as sub-commentaries⁴ understand the *śulka* in this case in the general sense of the king's dues for protection. *Pāṇini* also refers to sources of revenue (*āyasthāna*) which the commentator illustrates by the example of the toll-house and the like.⁵ The Old commentary in the *Vinaya*

¹ IV, 2. 18-19.

² For another reference to State trading, see *Mahā.*, II, 5. 115.

³ V, 1.47.

⁴ Cf. the definition in the *Kāśikā* on the above *rakṣānirveśo rāja-bhāgaḥ śulkaḥ* which the *Bālaṃanoramā* further explains as *rakṣā tadarthe nirveśo bhṛtīḥ rakṣānirveśaḥ*, and the *Padamañjarī* as *nirveśo bhṛtīḥ rakṣā-nimiṭṭako nirveśo rakṣādinirveśaḥ*.

⁵ See *Pāṇ.*, IV, 3. 75 and the *Kāśikā* on the same. Another rule of *Pāṇini* (IV, 50) refers to *avakraya* which the *Siddhāntakaumudī* explains in the general sense of royal dues (*rājagrāhyam dravyam*), but which the *Padamañjarī* explains as customs duties. The *Kāśikā* adds that the *avakraya* is levied not only justly, but also unrighteously by oppressing the subjects.

Piṭaka specifically mentions¹ that the kings used to fix the customs frontier (*suṅkaghāta*) in hills, bathing-places in rivers and gates of villages for the collection of tolls (*suṅka*). The Divyāvadāna, a collection of Buddhist stories dating from before the third century of the Christian era, repeatedly refers to the tolls and other duties paid by the merchants. Thus in one story² a house-holder invites by ringing of bell all persons wishing to accompany his son on a sea-voyage without payment of the customs duties (*śulka*) and the freight for merchandise (*tarapanya*) to bring over goods suited for carriage across the high seas. In another story³ a merchant similarly invites all persons who wish to accompany him on a sea-voyage without payment of customs duties (*śulka*), fees payable at military or police stations (*gulma*) and freight for merchandise. In a third story⁴ the alarm with regard to the payment of charges at the military or police stations and the freight for merchandise is put on the same level with the alarm from fire, flood, wild animals, thieves and the like. It will be observed that we have here a list of the same charges payable by the merchants (tolls, ferry charges and the like), that occur in the Arthaśāstra. On the other hand the well-known prose romance called the Daśakumāracharitam⁵ refers through the mouth of the rake Vihārabhadra to the practice of dishonest officials who evaded the toll (*śulka*) by passing off their own goods as the royal merchandise.

We may properly mention, in the present place, a few references in the Arthaśāstra of Kauṭilya illustrating some prevalent forms of oppression upon merchants. Thus in one place the king is asked to protect trade-routes which are suffering through the oppressions of royal favourites, royal officers, boundary-officers and so forth. Such oppressions evidently partook of the nature of illegal exactions from the

¹ III, 52.

² *Ibid.*, p. 4.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 501.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 92.

⁵ Uchchhāsa VIII. (Bombay ed., 1919, p. 132).

merchants. This is pointedly illustrated in another place¹ where Kauṭilya describes a group of oppressions (*piḍanas*) comprising *inter alia* the evils of recreation on the part of the people, the king, the queen, and the royal prince. In the course of his description Kauṭilya mentions that the king's recreation is a source of oppression in as much as it leads the king or his favourites to make requisitions for benevolences, extra work in the warehouse and so forth. It is on identical grounds that another teacher whom Kauṭilya quotes declares the recreations of the royal prince to be a source of oppression. In the same context Kauṭilya quotes another view to the effect that the boundary officer oppresses the trade-routes under pretext of robbery by thieves and through the exaction of heavy dues from the merchants. While on this point we may mention that a Jātaka story² states how a royal prince with the advice of a wise man sought to ingratiate himself with the king and the subjects by fixing the tolls upon merchants. This seems to hint at another source of oppression of the merchants following from want of fixity of the toll.

While the collection of tolls on merchants by official agency and the State regulation of princes were the general rule, exceptions sometimes occurred. Medhātithi, commenting upon Manu's rule³ regarding the binding character of the laws of guilds, gives the following illustration. A number of leading merchants makes a verbal agreement with the king to pay his dues with the words, 'We live by this trade; let this be your due, whether our profits are greater or less.' On the king's agreeing to these terms they make arrangements among themselves which are conducive to their own interests and detrimental to the interests of the State. In such a case if any one transgresses the arrangement he should be punished for breach of the laws of the guilds.

¹ *Ibid.*, VIII, 1.

² Jāt., Vol. IV, p. 132.

³ VIII, 41.

CHAPTER IV

THE SOURCES OF REVENUE (CONTINUED) : INCOME FROM THE STATE ESTABLISHMENTS AND MISCELLANEOUS RECEIPTS FROM THE CITY.

Items of revenue in the Arthasāstra.

I

Under the class 'fortified city' the Arthasāstra mentions besides the items stated in the foregoing chapter and those to be presently described the following branches of revenue :—

- (1) threads (*sūtra*),
- (2) oils (*taila*),
- (3) clarified butter,
- (4) sugar (*kṣāra*), and
- (5) goldsmiths (*sauvarṇika*).

The nature of these receipts will best appear from Kauṭilya's description of the functions of officers severally called the Superintendent of spinning, the Superintendent of gold and the State goldsmith. The Superintendent of spinning (*sūtrādhyakṣa*)¹ is expected to arrange for traffic in armour, clothes and ropes made of threads. Rules are laid down for his employment of women of various classes for spinning threads, and of unskilled craftsmen (*kārus*) for weaving various kinds of cloth. In this connection provision is made for women who do not wish to attend the spinning factory (*sūtrasālā*) to covertly exchange their products for their salaries. It is evident that

¹ Kauṭ., II, 23.

we are here concerned with a State spinning and weaving establishment, of which the profits would apparently correspond to Kauṭilya's revenue term *sūtra*. The Superintendent of gold (*suvarṇādhyakṣa*) is required¹ to set up a skilled and trusted goldsmith (*sauvarṇika*) of good family in the midst of the market street. This person is required to carry out gold and silver manufactures for the citizens and country people. In this connection penalties varying from a small fine to mutilation of the fingers are laid down for persons authorising or carrying out manufactures of such articles without the goldsmith's permission, or in a place other than the market street. It would, therefore, appear that the State goldsmith had the monopoly of manufacture of gold and silver articles in the city as well as country-part. The ostensible excuse for this profitable undertaking was the notorious tendency of artisans to rob and cheat their customers.

II

Let us now turn from the State establishments properly so called to the State concerns which, although likewise productive of revenue, were calculated to contribute to the public utility. Among the various constituents of the State income which the Arthaśāstra groups together under the head 'fortified city' there occur two items called 'gambling' (*dyūta*) and the 'Superintendent of the Mint' (*lakṣaṇādhyakṣa*). As to the first item some light is thrown by Kauṭilya in course of his description of the head of law called 'gambling and betting'² in his section on civil and criminal law. There we are introduced to an officer called the Superintendent of gambling who is required to concentrate the play in one place and punish with a small fine those playing elsewhere. What concerns us at present is to note that the Superintendent is

¹ *Ibid.*, II, 13-14.

² III, 20.

required to take 5 per cent. of the winner's stakes, together with the hire (*avakraya*) for supplying dice and other accessories, as well as the fee (*kraya*) for supplying water and the site for play. The same rules, we are told later on, are to apply to betting (*samāhvaya*) with certain exceptions. To the collective body of receipts thus accounted for must apply the revenue term 'gambling' above mentioned.

As regards the technical term 'Superintendent of the Mint,' Kauṭilya conveys some information in his chapter relating to mines and the manufacturing operations connected therewith.¹ There we are told that the Superintendent of the Mint should manufacture according to stated processes silver coins (*pañās*) and copper coins (*māṣas*) of 4 denominations each. We are next introduced to an officer called *rūpadarśaka* ('Examiner of coins,' 'Münzenprüfer') who is obviously a subordinate of the Mint Superintendent. His function is to regulate the circulation of coins required for general currency as well as those suitable for admission into the king's treasury. This passage has been taken to mean² that of the two types of coins mentioned immediately above, the silver coins were contemplated as payable into the king's treasury, while the copper coins were used for general traffic. In that case the former alone would be legal tender for payment into the State treasury, while the latter would serve as the currency for general circulation.³ Whatever that may be, the Arthasāstra introduces us in the following lines to a set of charges and fines as follows:—

- (1) *rūpika*, 'Sondersteuer,' of 8 per cent.;
- (2) *vyāñi*, 'Vergütungsgebühr,' of 5 per cent.;

¹ II, 12.

² By Bhattacharya; cf. Monahan, *The Early History of Bengal*, p. 53.

³ In Kauṭ., II, 5 mention is made of coins (*hiranya*) being tested by the Examiner of coins, and received thereafter into the king's treasury by the *samāhartā*.

- (3) *pārikṣika*, 'testing-charge,' 'Prüfungssportel,' of $\frac{1}{8}$ per cent. ;
- (4) fine of 25 *panas* for persons other than the manufacturer, the purchaser and the seller.¹

In connection with these charges it may be noticed that elsewhere² we are told that when the *vyājī* is paid there should be a free circulation of currency, while the Examiner of coins should be fined 12 *panas* if he were to levy an additional charge of one *māṣa* for every *pana*. In the light of this notice and in view of analogous cases³ it seems proper to suppose that we are here concerned with private manufacture of coins under State license. In that case the king should be entitled to levy charges sufficient to compensate him for the infringement of the State monopoly of coinage. Such charges, as we learn from the above, consisted of three distinct items aggregating to $13\frac{1}{8}$ per cent. Additional charges amounting to 16 per cent. (one *māṣa* in each *pana*) were apparently known, although discountenanced by the *Arthaśāstra*. As a corollary from the above, fines were apparently levied when the coins fell below the standard weight, the highest penalty being reserved for those who manufactured the lighter coins or used them in the course of traffic.

III

Turning to the last class of royal receipts under the present head, we may notice that the remaining items which are included under the head 'fortified city' consist of the following charges :—

- (1) fines, 'Geldstrafen' (*daṇḍa*),
- (2) Superintendent of the city (*nāgarika*),

¹ These last, according to the commentator, should be punished with a much higher fine, viz., 1,000 *panas*. ² Kauṭ., IV, 1.

³ Cf. the items of revenue derived from salt, liquors and the royal merchandise (Kauṭ., II, 12, 15 and 16).

- (3) Superintendent of seals and passports (*mudrādhyakṣa*),
- (4) slaughter-house (*sūnā*),
- (5) prostitutes,
- (6) building sites (*vāstuka*),
- (7) guild of artisans and craftsmen (*kāraśilpigaṇa*),
- (8) Superintendent of divine establishments (*devatā-dhyakṣa*),
- (9) receipts from the *bāhirikas*.

As regards the first item a very large proportion of the penalties imposed by the courts of justice, as we learn from Kauṭilya's section on civil and criminal law, consisted of fines. The courts of justice, moreover, held their sittings in the cities. Kauṭilya, *e.g.*, mentions ¹ boards of three judges (*dharmasthas*) sitting for the decision of cases at the frontiers of the kingdom, and at the head-quarters of ten, four hundred and eight hundred, villages, while elsewhere ² other boards of judges called (*pradeśṭrs*) are mentioned without specification of their place of sitting. What is of more importance, Kauṭilya indicates ³ a number of subsidiary charges which were levied over and above the usual fines. These consisted of (a) *rūpa*, 'Formstrafe,' amounting to 8 per cent., which was apparently levied for fines below 100 *paṇas* and (b) *vyājī*, 'Vergütungsgebühr,' amounting to 5 per cent., which was levied when the fine exceeded 100 *paṇas*. With regard to these charges we are told that they are unrighteous in as much as they owed their origin to the fault of the king or of his subjects, while the fine properly so called is just.⁴ The above evidently means that the two additional charges did not form a part of the traditional system, but were introduced partly for repression of crime, and partly out of the

¹ III, 1.

² *Ibid.*, IV, 1.

³ III, 17.

⁴ Read '*dharmyā tu prakṛtiḥ*' with Gaṇ. and M. instead of *dharmyānuprakṛtiḥ* of Sh. and Jolly-Schmidt.

king's greed, and as such they were disapproved by the authors of the technical literature on Polity. It may be mentioned that there is not a trace of these charges in the *Smṛtis*.¹

Turning to the next branch of revenue in the present context, we may mention that the *Arthaśāstra* in its chapter on the City Superintendent² does not directly indicate any form of State receipts derived by this functionary from the inhabitants of the city. The above chapter, however, mentions a class of officers called *gopas* and *sthānikas* belonging to the staff of the City Superintendent. The function of the *gopa* (‘Distriktaufseher’) who has to look after 10, 20, or 40 families virtually amounts to the preparation of a census of inhabitants within his charge, under the heads of sex, caste, clan-name, personal name, occupation, as well as a statement of their income and expenditure. The *sthānika* (‘Kreisauferseher’) is required similarly to take cognizance of his wider jurisdiction extending over $\frac{1}{4}$ of the city. Above the *gopas* and the *sthānikas* stands the *nāgarika* (‘the City Superintendent’), who is required to inspect the city in the same way as the *samāhartā* inspects the kingdom. Probably he was expected to prepare a written record of the contributions payable by the inhabitants of the city under various heads. It is evident that the returns of the *gopas* and the *sthānikas*

¹ While on this subject we may mention that the *Arthaśāstra* is already familiar with the famous classification of judicial fines into the three grades of first, middle and highest amercement known to the *Smṛtis* (cf. *ibid.*, III, 17). Only while the latter mentions the grades as consisting of 250 (or 270), 500 (or 540), and 1,000 (or 1,080) *paṇas*, the former makes them consist of fines ranging from 48 to 96, 200 to 500 and 500 to 1,000 *paṇas* respectively. We must, however, remember that the *paṇa* of the *Arthaśāstra* is a silver coin, while that of the *Smṛtis* (Manu, VIII, 136, etc.) is a copper coin.

² Kauṭ., II, 36.

would furnish a very complete basis for the assessment of the Government revenue. A direct reference is made to a tax of this kind in a statement of Megasthenes relating to the administration of the imperial city of Pataliputra under the Mauryas.¹ This has sometimes² been explained to be a kind of poll-tax, but it might as well stand for some form of taxation levied upon the incomes of the citizens.

With regard to the next revenue-term in the above-mentioned list, it may be remarked that the Arthaśāstra refers in one place³ to the functions of an officer called the Superintendent of Passports, 'Passaufseher' (*mudrādhyakṣa*). He is required to issue passports, each for one copper coin (*māṣa*), and no one is permitted to enter or leave the kingdom without them. Appropriate fines are laid down in this connection for breach of the above regulations. Unfortunately, while the revenue-term 'Superintendent of Passports' is classed under the head 'fortified city,' the jurisdiction of the officer thus called, as above described, extended beyond doubt over the country-part.

With regard to the next revenue-term 'Slaughter-house,' we may mention that the Arthaśāstra in its chapter⁴ on the Superintendent of Slaughter-house (*sūnādhyakṣa*) requires this officer to receive $\frac{1}{16}$ of all animals that cause injury and are not protected,⁵ $\frac{1}{10}$ or more⁶ of fishes and birds, and the duty (*śulka*) or something more upon deer and other creatures. We are not told whether these charges refer to the amount or value of the creatures concerned, but the latter

¹ See below, Part III, Ch. I.

² Cf. Vincent Smith, *Early History of India*, 4th ed., p. 134.

³ II, 34.

⁴ II, 26.

⁵ *Aparighṛitam* in the original, expld. as above by Gan. On the other hand M. tr. as 'die nicht darüber ertappt worden sind.'

⁶ *Vādhikam* tr. as above by Sh. and Gan. It is tr. as 'Tötungsbusse' by M.

seems to be meant here. Various regulations are laid down in this connection, of which the breach is visited with fines.

Of the next revenue-term 'prostitutes' little need be said. In the chapter relating to the Superintendent of courtesans (*gaṇikādhyaṅkṣa*)¹ the Arthaśāstra mentions that prostitutes (*rūpājīva*) are to pay every month twice their fees to the king's treasury.² It will be noticed later on that the prostitutes as well as the singers and dancers are required to contribute half their wages (*vetana*) during the king's emergencies. This apparently refers to the class of prostitutes in the royal service. In the above-mentioned chapter dealing with the Superintendent of courtesans Kauṭilya begins by requiring this officer to select out of the families of courtesans or other families a State courtesan together with her substitute. Moreover the courtesans as such were in some ways a source of profit to the State. Thus the property of a courtesan, in the absence of her daughter, sister or other substitute, devolved upon the king. Again the ransom of the courtesan who belonged no doubt to the servile class was fixed at the very high figure of 24,000 (*paṇas*), while that of her son was fixed at 12,000. For the guidance of this class of people various rules were laid down whose violation involved, as usual, fines and other penalties.³

Regarding the next term *vāstukam* ('building sites,' 'Baugrund') we have very little information from the Arthaśāstra. We would, however, suggest it to mean ground-rent for buildings, shops and the like, that are

¹ II, 27.

² *Bhogaḍvayagaṇam*, tr. as above by M. On the other hand Gaṇ. explains it as 'two days' earnings.'

³ For a modern example of the tax on prostitutes, see Lawrence, *The Valley of Kashmir*, p. 417.

situated in the city.¹ As we shall presently see, the Śukra-nīti mentions a tax (*śulka*) upon building sites as well as the sites of shops.

When we pass on to the next item of revenue called the guild of artisans and craftsmen, we are faced with some difficulty. The Arthaśāstra is familiar with craftsmen of various kinds who are employed in the royal service. Thus in the chapter² describing what may be called the expenses of the king's establishment, the rates of pay are laid down for this class of people as follows :—

Carpenters	...	...	2,000 <i>paṇas</i>
Skilled persons	...	...	500 „
Skilled and unskilled craftsmen	...	...	200 „

More specifically, the Arthaśāstra³ contemplates the employment of craftsmen on stated rates of pay under the officers severally called the Superintendent of spinning, the Superintendent of agriculture and the Superintendent of the armoury. The only notable instance in which the Arthaśāstra refers to the contributions from the artisans occurs in the chapter relating to the Superintendent of the slaughter-house.⁴ There we are told that this officer has, among other things, to look after work performed in lieu of taxes,⁵ which comprises the preparation of rice, flour, oil, sugar and the like. This branch of State receipts, however, is aptly enough mentioned

¹ Gaṇ.'s expln. of *vāstukam* as 'carpenters and the like employed in the construction of buildings' must be rejected, as the guild of artisans and craftsmen is separately mentioned as a branch of revenue under the same class 'fortified city.'

² Kauṭ., V, 3.

³ *Ibid*, II, 18, 23 and 24.

⁴ *Ibid*, II, 15.

⁵ The technical term for this charge is *śimhanikā* (v.r. *saṁhanikā* and *saṁhatikā*).

by Kauṭilya along with the head of revenue called country-part (*rāṣṭra*). Indirect reference to the contribution from artisans occurs in the chapter relating to the collection of revenue during emergencies.¹ There we are told that taxes (*karas*) of 20 per cent. and 10 per cent. are to be paid by the principal and the inferior craftsmen (*kārus*) respectively. Perhaps this presupposes a small contribution in cash payable by the craftsmen during normal times.

Let us turn to the item of revenue called the Superintendent of religious foundations (*devatādhyakṣa*). In the chapter relating to the foundation of the fortified city,² directions are given for the construction of temples belonging to the presiding deities of the city and of the royal family, as well as various other divinities. But we are left completely in the dark as regards any portion of the royal revenue derivable from this source. The Arthaśāstra, however, as we shall see later on, contemplates the Superintendent of religious foundations as deriving revenue during the king's emergencies from a variety of sources comprising appropriation of the wealth of temples and the exploitation of popular superstitions.

With regard to the last revenue-term under the present head, we are told in one place³ that the *bāhirikas* who cause harm both to the city and the country-part should either be banished to the frontiers, or else burdened with taxes. Of the class of persons indicated by this title no explanation is forthcoming in the Arthaśāstra, but it has been suggested⁴ to refer to rogues, cheats, actors, dancers and the like.

¹ Kauṭ., V, 2.

² *Ibid*, II, 4.

³ Kauṭ., II, 4.

⁴ See Gan.'s comm. on the concluding stanza in Kauṭ., II, 4.

Items of revenue in the Smṛtis.

When we turn to the works of the Smṛti literature, we find that they deal, as usual, only with some of the items of revenue mentioned in the Arthaśāstra. The branches of revenue in these works, that properly fall within the limits of the present chapter, consist of the following :—

- (1) State receipts from gambling and betting,
- (2) fines,
- (3) contributions from the artisans.

As regards the first item the Smṛtis like the Arthaśāstra seem to maintain a two-fold attitude towards gambling, for while some of them place it under a ban on moral grounds, others sanction it in the interest of the king's treasury. Thus Baudh.¹ includes gambling in a list of impure acts. On the other hand Āpast.² contemplates the king as providing a dicing table in the midst of the Assembly-hall, "where Aryans pure and truthful are to play." The players, according to the commentator Haradatta, are to pay the stipulated sum to the gambling house-keeper, who is to convey the same regularly to the king. Coming to the metrical Smṛtis, we find that Manu³ requires the king in one place to punish gamblers and sundry other persons on the ground that they afflict the good subjects. Elsewhere⁴ Manu includes the gamblers in a class of thorns

¹ II, 1. 47. ² II, 10, 25, 12-13.

³ Manu, IX, 224-228 ; cf. Mahā., XII, 88. 14-15. Of the same nature is Brhaspati's citation of Manu quoted in *Parāśaramādhava, Vyavahāra-kāṇḍam*, p. 393 ; *Vivādaratnākara*, pp. 611-612.

⁴ IX, 258. In the same class Manu includes skilled prostitutes. This suggests that like the gamblers the prostitutes are excluded from the sources of revenue in Manu's system.

by the side of the king's subjects. On the other hand Yāj.¹ provides that gambling should be brought under control of a single officer of the king for the purpose of detecting thieves. In the same context he states that the keeper of the gambling-house should give the king his proper share, and make over the winnings to the winner of the stakes. Kāty.², after condemning the evils of gambling, declares that if it should be played in public for causing the infatuation of Aryans, it should be made subject to taxation, while elsewhere he says that the keeper of the gambling house should make suitable arrangements for the games, and should make over the king's dues personally to him. This agrees substantially with the rule of Nār.³ who states that gamblers may play in public, provided they pay the king his stipulated dues. According to Brhaspati gambling and betting should take place under the superintendence of the keeper of the gambling-house, who should receive the stakes and pay the winner as well as the king their respective dues.⁴

Coming to the next item of revenue under the present head, we find that the Smṛtis contemplate the artisans and craftsmen as paying their contributions in two forms, *viz.*, the primitive form of service and the more advanced one of taxes paid in cash. According to Gaut.⁵ one day's work every month should be done for the king by the artisans (*śilpin*), as well as those who live by personal labour and the

¹ *Ibid.*, II, 200, 203.

² Quoted, *Vivādaratnākara*, pp. 611-612.

³ XVI, 8.

⁴ The *Sukranīti*, it may be noticed, declares (I, 301) that the king should prohibit gambling without his permission. As an instance of this kind of taxation in Mediaeval India it may be mentioned that gambling houses occur in a list of imposts abolished by Firuz Tughlak, Sultan of Delhi, in 1375 A. C. (Thomas, *Chronicles of the Pathan Kings of Delhi*, p. 5n.)

⁵ X, 31-33.

makers of boats and of wheeled conveyances. Viṣṇu ¹ makes the rule apply to the artisans, those who live by manual labour and the Śūdras, while Manu ² applies it to craftsmen, artisans and the Śūdras living by manual labour. Very similar to the above is the rule of the Agni Purāṇa.³ On the other hand Vasiṣṭha ⁴ contemplates the artisans as paying a monthly tax. According to a Mahābhārata passage ⁵ the king should impose taxes (*karas*) upon artisans after a careful consideration of the output, the receipts and the expenses as well as the particular craft concerned. A middle course is suggested by Uśanas (Śukra), quoted by Maskarin in his commentary on Gaut.,⁶ to the effect that the artisans should perform one day's work every month or pay the king one *kārṣāpaṇa* (probably a copper coin) instead. The method of contribution in personal service, however, survived down to later times. Thus the Śukranīti⁷ requires the artisans and craftsmen to perform one day's work every fortnight—a rule which obviously amounted to doubling of the burden contemplated in the Smṛtis. In many of the Hindu States of Rajputana at the present time artisans have to perform one piece of work for the king in lieu of tax.⁸

We may, lastly, consider a class of receipts in the Śukranīti, which properly falls within the scope of the present chapter. There we are told ⁹ that the king should take $\frac{1}{3\frac{1}{2}}$ share from

¹ III, 32.

² VII, 138. ³ CCXXIII, 33.

⁴ XIX, 28.

⁵ XII, 87. 14-15.

⁶ X, 31.

⁷ IV, 2. 121.

⁸ See the article 'Rajputana to-day' in *Modern Review*, Calcutta, December, 1928.

⁹ IV, 2. 128-129. As an example of a similar tax in Mediaeval India may be mentioned the ground-rent for stalls in the market, which is included in a list of imposts formally abolished by Firuz Toghluq in 1375 A. C. (Thomas, *Chronicles*, p. 5n) and by Aurangzeb in 1675 (Sarkar, *Mughal Administration*, p. 123).

usurers and money-lenders. This evidently amounts to a kind of income-tax upon certain professions. Further, we are told that the king should impose a duty (*śulka*) upon building-sites, as is done in the case of cultivated land. Probably this means that the ground-rent was assessed at the same rate as the land-revenue. Again, it is said in the same context that the king should impose a duty (*śulka*) upon the sites of shops from shop-keepers, and another tax upon travellers for keeping the roads in repair. With this last item may be compared the road-cess of British Indian administration in our own times.

CHAPTER V

THE SOURCES OF REVENUE (CONCLUDED) : INCOME FROM MINES, GARDENS, FORESTS AND HERDS—MISCELLANEOUS RECEIPTS OF THE KING.

In the foregoing chapters we have reviewed in succession most of the groups of revenue comprised in the *Arthaśāstra*¹ under the general heading of 'constituents of State income,' 'Einnahmenkörper.' The groups that remain to be accounted for consist of the following :—

1. 'mines' (*khanī*),
2. 'embanked reservoirs,' 'Bewässerungsanlagen' (*setu*),
3. 'forests' (*vana*),
4. 'herds' (*vraja*).

With regard to the first group it has to be remarked that the *Arthaśāstra* is very well acquainted with the use of mines for State purposes. "Out of mines," says Kautilya,² "arises the revenue, out of revenue arises the army, the territory which has the State income for its equipment is acquired by means of the revenue and the army." Elsewhere³ Kautilya quotes the view of an unknown *Arthaśāstra* teacher regarding the relative advantages of two different kinds of mines from the point of view of a couple of allied powers seeking to overreach each other. It is thus explicable why a reward as heavy as $\frac{1}{8}$ should be awarded to the person communicating the discovery of mines.⁴ The maintenance of old mines and the construction

¹ II, 6.

³ VII, 12.

² II, 12.

⁴ *Ibid*, IV, 1.

of new ones are inculcated upon the king together with the undertaking of works connected with the same.¹

Coming to a detailed consideration of the above branch of revenue we find that Kauṭilya defines 'mines' as consisting of the following :—

- (1) gold,
- (2) silver,
- (3) diamonds,
- (4) precious stones,
- (5) pearls,
- (6) corals,
- (7) conches,
- (8) base metals,
- (9) salt,
- (10), (11) and (12) minerals derived from the earth, stones and fluids.

Again, in the chapter relating to the working of mines² we are introduced to a list of ten specific classes of income, *viz.* :—

- (1) the price, 'Preisertrag' (*mālya*),
- (2) king's share (*vibhāga*),
- (3) compensation-fee, 'Vergütungsgebühr' (*vyājñ*),
- (4) 'door-bolt,' or 'Tormaut' (*parigha*),
- (5) 'the prescribed fine,' 'die (schon gennante) Geldbusse' (*atyaya*),
- (6) toll or duty (*śulka*),
- (7) indemnity-fee, 'Entschädigungsgeld' (*vaidharāṇa*),
- (8) the unprescribed fee (*danḍa*),
- (9) 'Formgebühr' (*rūpa*),
- (10) 'Einzelgebühr' (*rūpika*).

The connection of these items of revenue with the different kinds of mines above-mentioned may be illustrated

¹ *Ibid.*, II, 1.

² II, 12.

from the chapter relating to the working of mines. The Superintendent of Mines (*ākarādhyakṣa*), we are there told, should examine old and new mines for ores : he is to send the products to the workshops concerned for being turned into manufactures ; he is finally to centralise the sale of the manufactured product in one place, and he is to impose the prescribed fine (*atyaya*) upon those who manufacture or sell or purchase the same elsewhere. In particular, the Superintendent of base metals (*lohādhyakṣa*) is to arrange for the manufacture of specified varieties of these metals, and for traffic in the manufactured products. The Superintendent of precious metals (*khanyādhyakṣa*) is to do the same for conches, diamonds, precious stones, pearls, corals and salt (*kṣāra*).

The regulations regarding the manufacture and the sale of salt are more complex than the above. Here we are introduced to an officer called the Superintendent of salt (*lavaṇādhyakṣa*). He is to collect out of the prepared salt the king's share (*lavaṇabhāga*) and the rent (*prakraya*) ; he is also to collect out of the sale of salt the price (*mūlya*), the *rūpa*, and the *vyājī*. The first apparently refers to the manufacture of salt by private persons under a State license, while the second seems to refer to private sales of salt under similar conditions. We are next told that the imported salt is to be liable to the following charges :—

- (1) $\frac{1}{8}$,
- (2) *vyājī* of 5 per cent.,
- (3) *rūpa*,
- (4) *rūpika*,
- (5) toll or duty (*śulka*),
- (6) indemnity-fee (*vaidharāṇa*) equivalent to the loss inflicted upon the royal merchandise.

Of these items the first four are to be charged upon the seller, while the last two are imposed upon the purchaser. In

continuation of the above, we are told that the charges on other kinds of salt and sugar are to consist of the toll or duty (*śulka*) apparently to the exclusion of other items. Of the charges mentioned in the foregoing list the *śulka* is evidently the import duty amounting, as we learn elsewhere,¹ to $\frac{1}{20}$ or $\frac{1}{25}$. Other charges are mostly of the nature of counter-vailing duties intended to protect the royal monopoly of salt manufacture against foreign importation.

To illustrate still further the nature of the heads of revenue mentioned in this connection, it is necessary to consider some other rules of the Arthasāstra regarding the working of mines. Thus, in the first place, it is laid down as a general rule that mines which are burdensome, because of the heavy outlay involved therein and the difficulty of their working, should be let out in return for a share in the output (*bhāga*) or for rent (*prakraya*), while those that are easy to work should be managed by the Superintendent of mines. In other words, while the mines were regarded beyond doubt as State monopoly, the policy of the Arthasāstra tended to confine the State management only to those that were easy to work. In the next place, we have to mention that the Arthasāstra prescribes a relatively heavy penalty for breach of the various regulations connected with the mines. For theft by workers in the mines, the penalty is to be eight times the value of the stolen article. Elsewhere² the capital penalty is prescribed for theft of precious stones from the workshops. For thieves as well as those who live by the mining products without license, the penalty is to be penal servitude. In the case of salt those who live by it without the king's permission have to pay the highest amercement, an exception being made in favour of hermits, ascetics, learned Brāhmaṇas and so forth.

¹ II, 22. ² IV, 9: *Khanisāra karmāntebhyaḥ sārām ratnam vāpaharataḥ śuddhavadhah.*

A careful consideration of the above would seem to point to the following items of revenue derivable in the Arthaśāstra system from mines :—

1. Proceeds of sale of various classes of metalware manufactured in the State workshops. These correspond beyond doubt to the 'price' (*mūlya*) in the foregoing list of charges from mines.
2. King's share of the output as well as rent derived from mines that were let out on hire, and especially from salt that was apparently manufactured under State license. These correspond to the revenue term 'share' (*vibhāga*) of the foregoing list.
3. Duty upon imported salt corresponding to the *śulka* of the list.
4. *Vyājī*, *vaidharāṇa*, *rūpa* and *rūpika* charged upon private sellers of salt and sugar, and importers as well as purchasers of the same.
5. Specified and unspecified fines called *atyaya* and *daṇḍa* respectively in the foregoing list.¹

With regard to the next group of revenues it is not possible to state much. It is called 'embanked reservoir' (*setu*), which is defined as consisting of flower gardens, fruit gardens vegetable gardens, rice fields and fields producing other crops. Evidently the term was used in a technical sense to indicate the gardens and fields owned by the king. That the produce of such fields was drawn into a source of profit by the State

¹ With regard to the ten items of revenue mentioned in Kauṭ., II, 12, it should be remarked that they do not apply exclusively to the output of mines, for we are expressly told in the same context that the Superintendent should create sources of profit similarly with regard to all merchandise. As a matter of fact the list of ten items above-mentioned includes the whole set of seven general sources of revenue, 'Einnahmequellen,' (*āyamukha*) mentioned in Kauṭ., II, 6.

is shown by the reference in another connection ¹ to the royal merchandise of internal origin that was derived from the *setu*.

The next revenue head 'forest' is defined as comprising the possession of game-forests,² useful-product forests³ and elephant-forests. Now in the chapters relating to the settlement of lands⁴ the king is required to set up game-forests for his own recreation as well as for sanctuary, product-forests (*dravyavana*) of different kinds and elephant-forests. But nothing is mentioned naturally enough about the revenues derived from these sources. In so far as the forest products (*kupya*) are concerned, some light is thrown upon this point by Kauṭilya's description of the functions of the Superintendent of forest products.⁵ The Superintendent, we are told, should not only collect the forest produce, but arrange for its being turned into commodities, such manufactures being designed both for means of livelihood and for defence of the capital city. It is evident that the manufactured products of the first kind would readily become a source of profit to the State. A direct reference is made to this point by the above-cited passage of the *Arthaśāstra*⁶ mentioning the royal merchandise of internal origin derived from the forest. It may be mentioned in this connection that the Superintendent of forest products is expected to prescribe fines upon those felling trees in the forest, while elsewhere⁷ a heavy fine amounting to 100 *paṇas* is required to be imposed for theft of game and useful

¹ Kauṭ., II, 35: *evam vaidēhakavyaṇjanāḥ svabhūmijānām rājapanyānam khaṇīsetuvanakarmāntakṣetrajānām parimāṇamarghaṇcha vidyuh.*

² *Paśumṛgavana*, tr. as above by Sh. On the other hand Gaṇ. understands it to mean two distinct kinds of forests. M. shows good reasons for rejecting this interpretation. His own trans. of the term is 'Rotwildwald.'

³ *Dravyavana* tr. as 'Nutzwald' by M.

⁴ Kauṭ., II, 1 and 2.

⁶ *Ibid.*, II, 35.

⁵ *Ibid.*, II, 17.

⁷ *Ibid.*, IV, 10.

products from the forests concerned. The proceeds of sale of the manufactured products from the forest as well as the fines must have contributed to make up the revenue item 'forest' mentioned in the foregoing list.

The last head of revenue which has to be mentioned in this connection is 'herd' which is defined as comprising the following items:—

- (1) cattle,
- (2) buffaloes,
- (3) goats,
- (4) sheep,
- (5) asses,
- (6) camels,
- (7) mules,
- (8) horses.

Now in the chapter relating to the settlement and re-settlement of territory the king is directed to protect herds of animals against thieves, wild animals, poisoners and diseases, but it is doubtful whether this regulation refers to the royal herds alone. A pointed reference is made to the State herds of cattle in the chapter above-mentioned, relating to the expenses of the king's establishment,¹ where cattle-breeders are included in the list of persons receiving 200 *panas* and herdsmen receive 60 *panas*. Above all, the Arthaśāstra mentions² two officers called the Superintendent of cattle (*go'dhyakṣa*) and the Superintendent of horses (*aśvādhyakṣa*) who are beyond doubt officers in charge of the royal herds and studs. In the course of his description of the functions of these officers Kauṭilya mentions an annual tax of eight measures of clarified butter, a fee of one *pana* per tail and so forth, which persons tending certain specified kinds of cattle had to pay to the owner (*i.e.*, the king). It is also mentioned that persons tending

¹ Kauṭ., V, 2.

² II, 29-30.

certain other classes of cattle had to pay a tax consisting of a share in the resulting products. Moreover, the owner had to pay a charge of $\frac{1}{10}$ for cattle that had strayed into the king's herd.¹ In the same context we are told that those who sell the animals should pay to the king's officers $\frac{1}{4}$ *pana* for every head. In the following chapter we are told that the Superintendent of horses should look after a class of horses kept in the market-place for sale. This apparently refers to the sale of royal horses by the State officer for profit.

To complete this part of our survey, it is necessary to consider the references to the above-mentioned heads of revenue in the literature of Law and of Polity other than the Arthaśāstra. With regard to one of these heads, *viz.*, the mines, the views of these authorities appear to show a marked divergence. Viṣṇu² expressly declares that the king should appropriate the whole output of mines. On the other hand Manu, while mentioning³ the mines as a source of revenue for which trusted officials are to be employed by the king, asks⁴ that the king should take only one-half of the metals found underground. Evidently the mines were contemplated as being worked by private agency, subject to the payment of a tax to the king. Similarly the Mānasollāsa, a popular encyclopædia attributed to the Chālukya king Someśvara III (reigned c. 1125-1138 A. C.) recommends⁵ that the king should impose a tax upon the output of gold mines, silver mines and the mines of precious stones. Like the Mānasollāsa the Śukraniti⁶ contemplates the imposition of a tax upon mines. This is fixed curiously enough on a graded scale, *viz.*, $\frac{1}{2}$ of gold, $\frac{1}{3}$ of silver, $\frac{1}{4}$ of copper, $\frac{1}{6}$ of base metals, tin as well as lead, $\frac{1}{2}$ of precious metals and $\frac{1}{2}$ of salt, after deducting in each case the expenses of production.

¹ The technical terms for these three charges are *karmpratikara*, *bhagnotsṛṣṭakam* and *bhāgānupraviṣṭakam*. ² III, 55. ³ VII, 62.

⁴ VIII, 39. ⁵ Vol. I, 2. 3.332; *cf. ibid*, 361. ⁶ IV, 2. 118-119.

V

The next group of revenues that we propose to consider in the present place is connected with certain heads of the Hindu civil law, namely the law of inheritance, the law of ownership and the like. As regards the first point a rule of law common to the Arthaśāstra and the Smṛtis is that the king is to seize the property in the absence of all heirs, the only exception being made in favour of Brāhmaṇas whose property devolves in such a case upon the community of learned Brāhmaṇas. Thus Gaut.¹ declares that the learned Brāhmaṇas are to take the property of a Brāhmaṇa dying without heirs (*anapatya*), while the king is to take the property of all others. Similarly Vaś.² after mentioning a list of heirs ending with the spiritual preceptor and the pupil, declares that on failure of these last the king is to take the property, but not the property of the Brāhmaṇa which is to be distributed in such a case among those versed in the Vedas. With this is almost identical the rule of Viṣṇu.³ According to Manu,⁴ in the event of failure of heirs, while the Brāhmaṇas versed in the Vedas are to take the property of a Brāhmaṇa, the king is to take the property of all others. Similarly Brhaspati⁵ states that if a Kṣatriya, Vaiśya or Śūdra dies without leaving a male issue or wife or brother, his property should be taken by the king. An interesting application of the familiar rule of the Smṛtis occurs in Nārada.⁶ According to him when a merchant wandering from country to country arrives at a certain place and dies there, the king is to guard his property till the heir is found out : if the heir is not found,

¹ XXVIII, 41-42.

² XVI, 83-87.

³ XVII, 13-14.

⁴ IX, 188-189.

⁵ Quoted, *Vyavahāramayūkha*, ed. P. V. Kane, p. 145.

⁶ III, 16-18.

the king is to make it over to his kinsmen and his relatives : if even these are not found, the king is to guard the property strictly during ten years after which he may appropriate it to himself.

In connection with the present point it only remains to add that the rule of the Arthaśāstra is essentially similar to that of the Smṛtis, but there are some minor differences. According to Kauṭilya¹ the king is to take the property of persons dying without heirs, after leaving a sufficient amount for the maintenance of the widow and the funeral ceremony of the deceased, while the property of learned Brāhmaṇas is to devolve upon those versed in the three Vedas. Another passage of the Arthaśāstra² seems to hint at a more stringent application of the legal rule by the king in actual practice. There we are introduced to a class of revenue ' arising from some other source ' (*anyajāta*) which comprises the property of persons having no sons. It would thus seem that the property was actually taken by the king for failure of direct descendants, while the rule permitted this course only in the event of failure of all heirs.³

We are fortunate enough to illustrate the application of the above rule from a number of references in the Buddhist as well as the Brahmanical literature. Thus the Pali Saṃyutta Nikāya⁴ contains the story of a sonless miserly householder of Śrāvastī whose vast property after his death is conveyed by the order of the king to the royal palace. The same story is reproduced in the Jātaka commentary⁵ and the Dhammapada commentary.⁶ In these latter versions the

¹ III, 5.

² II, 6.

³ While on this subject we may mention a remarkable rule of Vas. (XIX, 35-36) relating to the property of impotent and insane persons. It is to the effect that such property should go to the king, who is, however, bound to maintain the dispossessed persons.

⁴ Part I, p. 89, P.T.S. edition. ⁵ Vol. III, p. 299. ⁶ Vol. IV, p. 77.

king's right of ownership over the heirless property is indicated in a very pointed fashion, for in reply to the king's question 'To whom does the property of a person dying without heirs fall,' he is told 'To the king.' The Pali Vinaya Piṭaka¹ mentions how a young Buddhist monk on returning to his parents' house near Vaiśālī was pressed by his mother to raise an issue to his wife, lest the ruling clan of the Licchavis should seize the heirless property. Moreover, the Avadānaśataka, a Buddhist Sanskrit work of about the second century after Christ, tells the story of a childless merchant who laments that although his house is filled with riches, he has neither son nor daughter, and that after his death all his property will go to the king on the ground of its being without an heir.² We may, lastly, refer to the well-known incident in Kālidāsa's Śakuntalā,³ where a minister informs the king that a sea-faring merchant having perished from shipwreck and left no issue, his goods should lapse to the Crown, but the pious Duṣmanta, on hearing that one of the merchants' wives is pregnant, orders that the property should devolve upon the foetus in the womb. These examples would seem to prove that the moderate rule of the Arthaśāstra and Dharmaśāstras was in practice stretched so far as to make the property of persons dying without male issue liable to confiscation by the king.

The next branch of revenue that may be considered under the present head occurs in connection with the title of law called the sale of property without ownership (*asvāmī-vikraya*). Of property entirely given up by the owner Vas.⁴ says that it belongs to the king. Regarding lost or ownerless

¹ Vol. III, p. 19 ff., P.T.S. edition.

² *Avadānaśataka*, ed. Speyer, p. 13. In the *Divyāvadāna* (Cowell and Neil's ed., pp. 439-440), a childless king similarly laments that his property will go after his death to another king.

³ Act VI.

⁴ XVI, 19.

property Gaut.¹ declares that the king should keep it in custody for one year after which he is to give one-fourth to the finder, and take the rest. As regards property belonging to one who is not a Brāhmaṇa but of which the owner has since disappeared, Baudh.² says that the king should protect it for one year, after which he may take it for himself. Apparently the property of a Brāhmaṇa in a similar case cannot be taken by the king. More expressive than the above is the rule of Manu³ according to whom the property of which the owner has disappeared is to be kept in deposit by the king for three years during which the owner may claim it back, but afterwards the king is to take the same: out of the property thus lost and found the king may justly take $\frac{1}{6}$ or $\frac{1}{10}$ or $\frac{1}{12}$. Similar, but not identical, is the rule of Yāj.⁴ according to whom lost or stolen property which is found by the customs or other officers of the king may be taken back by the owner within the interval of one year after which the king is to take the same: out of the property thus lost and found and restored to the original owner the king is to take his share at the following rates:—

(1)	one-hoofed animal	...	... 4 paṇas.
(2)	slaves	... ..	... 5 „
(3)	buffaloes, camels or cattle	...	... 2 „
(4)	goats or sheep	...	... $\frac{1}{4}$ paṇa.

A constructive application of the above rule occurs in Brhaspati.⁵ According to him when a partner in trade dies, his goods are to be inspected by the king's officers and made over to his heir after satisfactory proof. In such an event the king is to take $\frac{1}{6}$, $\frac{1}{9}$, $\frac{1}{12}$ and $\frac{1}{20}$ from the property of

¹ X, 37-38.

² I, 10. 16.

³ VIII, 30-33.

⁴ II, 173-174.

⁵ Quoted, *Vivādaratnākara*, p. 116, *Vivādachintāmaṇi*, p. 65.

Sūdras, Vaiśyas, Kṣatriyas and Brāhmaṇas respectively. If, however, no heir should appear even after three years, the king should take the property, an exception being made in favour of the Brāhmaṇas whose property goes to other Brāhmaṇas.

It remains to add that the rule of the Arthaśāstra on this point is closely parallel to that of the Smṛtis. According to Kauṭilya¹ lost and stolen property is to lie at the toll-house for three fortnights after which the king is to take the same, should there be none to receive it, or the owner may take it back after proving his claim. In the latter case the owner is to pay a ransom (*niṣkraya*) on the scale of rates identical with that of Yāj.² As regards lost property the owner may receive it after proving his claim, but should he fail to prove his title, he is to pay a fine of 5 times the value of the article, which itself may properly be taken by the king. Elsewhere³ the Arthaśāstra includes the property lost and forgotten by others in the category of 'revenue derived from some other source' (*anyajāta*), or, in other words, extraordinary revenue. A concrete example of the above rule occurs in another place,⁴ where we are told that immovable property (*vāstu*), of which the ownership is lost or regarding which the dispute cannot be settled, is to go to the king, or in the alternative, is to be divided among deserving persons.

In later times a controversy arose as regards the extent of the king's right to the property lost or found after the expiry of the three years' deposit. According to a view

¹ III, 16.

² To the list of Yāj. Kauṭ. adds 5 per cent. for precious stones and for raw stuff of great or little value.

³ II, 6. Cf. *ibid*, 15.

⁴ III, 9: *tadubhayaṃ paroktam vāstu rājā haret pranaṣṭasvāmikañcha yathopakāram vā vibhajet.*

quoted by Medhātithi¹ the words of Manu 'the king shall take' means that he should enjoy its usufruct, for it is not right that the king should appropriate the property of another person even after the lapse of three years. This view which finds an echo in the Smṛti Digest called the Madanapārijāta of Viśveśvara is strongly attacked by Medhātithi who shows Manu's meaning to be that the king shall take possession of the property after three years.

Finally it may be mentioned that the Sukraniti shows the continuity of the traditional rule, for it contemplates the king as issuing a comprehensive edict (*śāsana*) forbidding the subjects, among other things, to take property without owners, and property that has been lost and found.²

As in the case of heirless property a number of references in the general literature helps us to illustrate the application of the rule relating to property of persons without sons. A Jātaka story³ tells us how when a king's chaplain (*purohita*) and his wife renounced the world after the example of their sons, the king proceeded forthwith to confiscate their property, saying that 'property without heirs (*assāmikadhānam*) belongs to the king,' but the queen convinces him of his mistake by a practical demonstration with the result that he himself was led to renounce the world. This story illustrates that notwithstanding the injunction of the Smṛtis to the contrary, even the property belonging to the Brāhmaṇas was liable to be seized by the king, though the act was regarded with disapproval. An instance of what may be called a constructive application of the usual rule relating to sonless property occurs in another Jātaka story.⁴ There we are told how a king takes a girl abandoned by her husband with the words 'unclaimed property (*assāmikabhaṇḍam*) belongs to the

¹ Commentary on Manu, VIII, 30.

² *Ibid*, I, 305.

³ Vol. IV, pp. 485-486.

⁴ Vol. VI, p. 348.

king.' The Jaina Uttarādhyayana Sūtra¹ tells the story of a king who was about to confiscate the property of his *purohita* when the latter renounced the world with his wife and sons, but the queen dissuaded her husband from this act.

The last branch of revenue that has to be mentioned under the present head consists of the king's claim to the whole or part of the treasure trove (*nidhi*). The rule of the Smṛtis on this point shows a remarkable development. According to Gaut.² treasure trove belongs to the king except when it is found by a Brāhmaṇa who duly performs his duties. Gaut. quotes in this connection the opinion of some who hold that the finder, not being a Brāhmaṇa, should get $\frac{1}{6}$ of the treasure. More definite than the above is the rule of Vas.³ who declares that when a treasure, of which the owner is not known, is found, the king is to take the same after giving $\frac{1}{6}$ to the finder, but he must not take it when a Brāhmaṇa devoted to the sixfold occupation of his caste finds it. The rule of Manu⁴ seems to contemplate three different cases, *viz.* :—

- 1st—When a person claims the treasure and proves his title thereto, the king should take from him $\frac{1}{6}$ or $\frac{1}{12}$ (which is beyond doubt his usual share of taxation). On the other hand if a person lays a false claim to the treasure, he is to pay a fine of eight times the value of his property.
- 2nd—When a learned Brāhmaṇa finds a treasure 'deposited in former times,' he may take the whole of it, 'for he is the lord of all.'
- 3rd—When a king finds the treasure, he is to give $\frac{1}{2}$ to the upper classes and send the other half into his own treasury.

¹ Lect. XIV.

³ III, 13-14.

² X, 43-45.

⁴ VIII, 35-39.

The king, we are further told in the same connection, is entitled to take $\frac{1}{2}$ of ancient hoards and metals found underground by virtue of his ensuring protection and 'because he is the lord of the soil.'¹ With the above may be compared the rule of Yāj.² who similarly contemplates three cases :—

1st—When the king finds a treasure, he is to share it equally with the Brāhmaṇas (*lit.* twice-born classes).

2nd—When a learned Brāhmaṇa finds the treasure, he is to keep the whole of it, "for he is the lord of all."

3rd—When any other person finds the treasure, the king is to take (it after paying) $\frac{1}{6}$ (to the finder).³

The view of Nār.⁴ is expressed in more cryptic language. According to him when a person finds a treasure deposited by others, he is to present it to the king, for all treasure trove other than that found by the Brāhmaṇas goes to the latter. Again, when a Brāhmaṇa finds the treasure, he is also to inform the king, and he may take possession of it after it has been given by the latter. This rule evidently ignores the reward of $\frac{1}{6}$, which the king according to other authorities is to pay to the finder, while it is silent as regards the person who claims the treasure and proves his title to the same. We may, lastly,

¹ In place of $\frac{1}{2}$ in the above, Medhātithi has 'share' or 'part' in general, which he explains to mean $\frac{1}{6}$ or $\frac{1}{12}$ as mentioned in a preceding verse. But this forced interpretation is unnecessary, as the usual meaning of $\frac{1}{2}$ fits in with the immediately preceding text.

² II, 34-35.

³ The above follows the interpretation of the famous commentator Vijñāneśvara, while the plain meaning of the text would be that the king was to take $\frac{1}{6}$ of the treasure found.

⁴ VII, 6-7.

mention the rule of Viṣṇu¹ who arranges the topic in a regular scheme as follows :—

- 1st—When the king finds the treasure, he is to make over one-half to the Brāhmaṇas and take the other half into his treasury.
- 2nd—When a Brāhmaṇa finds it, he should take the whole.
- 3rd—When a Kṣatriya finds it, he is to give $\frac{1}{4}$ to the king, $\frac{1}{4}$ to the Brāhmaṇas and take the remaining $\frac{1}{2}$.
- 4th—When a Vaiśya finds it, he should give $\frac{1}{4}$ to the king, $\frac{1}{2}$ to the Brāhmaṇas, and take the rest.
- 5th—When a Śūdra finds it, he is to give $\frac{5}{12}$ to the king, $\frac{5}{12}$ to the Brāhmaṇas, and take $\frac{1}{3}$ for himself.

The rule of the Arthaśāstra with regard to treasure trove, is similar to the above but not identical. Kauṭilya first lays down the general principle that the finder of mines, precious stones and treasure, is to get $\frac{1}{6}$ (if the finder is a labourer, he is to get $\frac{1}{12}$). Apparently by way of exception to this general rule we are told that when the treasure is valued above 1,00,000 (*paṇas*), it goes wholly to the king, whereas if it is of less value, the finder should get $\frac{1}{6}$.³ Furthermore, when a person of pure character proves his title to the treasure deposited by his ancestors, he is to take the whole of it, but if he fails to prove his claim, he is to be fined 500 (*paṇas*), and if he appropriates it clandestinely, he is to be fined 1,000 (*paṇas*). For the rest it may be mentioned

¹ III, 56-61. .

² IV, 1.

³ The above follows the explanation of M. who shows good reasons for rejecting Gan.'s interpretation to the effect that with regard to the treasure trove of less value the finder is to pay $\frac{1}{6}$ to the king. The same interpretation is given by Sh.

that the Arthaśāstra elsewhere ¹ includes treasure trove in the list of the king's receipts from some other source (*anya-jāta*). Another point of interest is that treasure trove is comprised ² along with the property of the king and the learned Brāhmaṇa in a list of objects of which the ownership is not lost by adverse possession.

A general comparison of the Dharmaśāstra and Arthaśāstra rules regarding treasure trove suggests the following points. Common to nearly all the authorities is the view that the finder of the treasure is to get $\frac{1}{6}$, while the rest goes to the king. The Arthaśāstra, however, while accepting the general principle, restricts its application to the treasure of less value alone. Common again to the later Smṛtis and the Arthaśāstra is the view that when a person proves his title to the treasure deposited by his ancestors, he should get the same, the Smṛtis only insisting that the king should take a portion of the same for himself.³

Coming down to later times we may notice a remarkable attempt on the part of some authoritative commentators of the Smṛtis and makers of Smṛti Digests to restrict the claims of the Brāhmaṇas with regard to treasure trove. Thus Medhātithi, commenting on one of the texts of Manu already cited,⁴ explains the phrase *pūrvamupanihitam* ('deposited in former times') as *pūrvaih pitrādibhirupanihitam* ('deposited by his ancestors'). From this he draws the conclusion that the rule permitting the Brāhmaṇas to take the treasure applies only when it belongs to them : when, however, the owner of the treasure is not known, the king's share

¹ II, 6.

² III, 16.

³ According to Jolly (*Recht und Sitte*, p. 103) the law of the later Smṛtis with regard to treasure trove shows a departure from the original theory, inasmuch as the king is less thought of in the later examples. This view evidently is based upon a literal interpretation of the text of Yāj. above quoted.

⁴ VIII, 37.

of $\frac{1}{6}$ has to be paid by the finder, even though he is a Brāhmaṇa. The same conclusion based upon the identical argument of Medhātithi is drawn by two other commentators of Manu, *viz.*, Govindarāja and Sarvajña-Nārāyaṇa as well as by Devanabhaṭṭa, the author of an important Digest called the *Smṛtichandrikā*. It is, however, as Kullūka says in his commentary on the same text of Manu, altogether unwarranted by the evidence, and is opposed to the texts of Yāj. and Nār. above mentioned. Another interesting development of which the tendency was to restrict the rights of the king with regard to the treasure trove may be noticed in the important Digest called the *Vīramitrodaya* of Mitramiśra.¹ There the author takes a text of Manu already cited² to mean that the king should keep the remaining half of the treasure in his treasury with the object of restoring it to the rightful owner when he appears. Evidently it was contemplated that the portion of the treasure left over after presentation to the Brāhmaṇas should not be appropriated by him, but should be kept in deposit. We may, finally, mention in this connection that the *Śukranīti*³ contemplates the king as issuing a comprehensive edict forbidding his subjects *inter alia* to take the treasure trove.

We may conveniently close this portion of our subject by pointing to a reference to the above-mentioned rule in the general literature. The *Samarāñcicakahā*, a Jaina religious romance written by Haribhadra (fl. 2nd half of 9th century A. C.) mentions⁴ how a mother warns her son not to remove a hidden treasure, lest the king should come to know of it. As we shall see later on, the land-grants of the dynasties of Northern India frequently contain a clause that the land is granted with all treasures and deposits. This evidently implied that the treasure trove was regarded normally as belonging to the king.

¹ *Rājanītiprakāśa*, p. 267.

² VIII, 39.

³ I, 304.

⁴ *Ibid*, p. 152, Jacebi's edition.

We have reserved for consideration in the last place a group of sources of revenue which are essentially irregular in their character. We may begin by mentioning the rule relating to the fleecing of various classes of persons regarded as unrighteous and impious. Perhaps the most conspicuous example of this kind occurs in a chapter of the Mahābhārata¹ where the Brāhmaṇas are divided into four grades, viz., those that are equivalent to the gods, the Śūdras, the Kṣatriyas and the Vaiśyas respectively. With regard to the second class, we are told that the righteous king may impose upon them compulsory labour (*viṣṭi*) as well as the agricultural tax (*bali*). With regard to the third and fourth, it is said that the king who is suffering from depletion of his treasury should impose on them the agricultural tax. In support of this remarkable rule is quoted² a Vedic maxim to the effect that the king is master of the wealth of all persons who are not Brāhmaṇas, as well as of those Brāhmaṇas who are not devoted to the performance of their duties. Again, the late mediaeval work called the Śukranīti, while declaring that the person unjustly acquiring wealth shares in the resulting sin, mentions that the king does not incur any guilt by seizing the entire property of undeserving persons. This is followed by the injunction that the king should seize the wealth of unrighteous persons by every means.³

The next class of the king's receipts that has to be mentioned in the present connection is concerned with what may be called the organised or unorganised plunder of foreign States. The Arthaśāstra⁴ mentions seven distinct classes of troops, of whom two (viz., the troops taken over from the enemy,⁵ and the

¹ XII, 76.

² *Ibid*, 10; cf. *ibid*, 77. 2.

³ *Ibid*, IV, 2. 5-7.

⁴ IX, 2.

⁵ *Amitrabalam* in the original, tr. by M. as 'Truppen die der Sieger dem Feind abgenommen hat.'

troops of foresters) are required to be maintained by means of raw material (*kupya*) or by the plunder of foreign States (*vilopa*). This evidently points to a system of organised plunder of foreign territories somewhat resembling the *chauth* and *sardesmukhi* of the Maratha States. The Smṛtis, while they do not furnish any exact parallel to the above, present some examples of what may be called the licensed plundering of foreign States by private individuals, from which the king derives a certain share of the profit. Thus according to Kāty.¹ when anything is brought over from an enemy's country by robbers by order of their lord, they should give a sixth part to the king and share the rest among themselves. Elsewhere he reserves a tenth part of the spoil for the share of the king.² Lastly, we may mention that the Śukranīti in one place³ directly sanctions the king's exaction of wealth from foreign States by force or fraud or robbery. Elsewhere⁴ it describes the king who increases the revenue by exacting tribute from his enemies and who protects his subjects after the fashion of the garland-maker to be the best of kings.

¹ Quoted, *Vivādaratnākara*, p. 125; *Parāśaramādhava*, *Vyavahāra-khaṇḍam*, p. 311.

² Mādhava., *loc. cit.*, explains the discrepancy by saying that the latter rule applies when the property is brought over from the territory of a weak enemy, while the former applies when it is taken from the territory of a strong enemy. Chanḍeśvara (*loc. cit.*) explains the divergence by saying that the rules of $\frac{1}{6}$ and $\frac{1}{10}$ are to be understood to apply accordingly as the enemy's country is near or far away.

³ IV, 2.7.

⁴ *Ibid*, 18-19.

CHAPTER VI

EMERGENCY REVENUE

A notable feature of the revenue system embodied in the literature of Law and Polity is that it not only contains a scheme of taxation for normal times, but also seeks to provide for the exceptional needs of the king or the State during grave emergencies. This last usually takes the form of enhancement of the standard rates of revenue under the known heads, or the imposition of wholly irregular demands upon the subjects, or else it combines both of them.

The most complete account of the branches of emergency revenue occurs as usual in the Arthaśāstra, which devotes a whole chapter¹ to the methods of replenishment of the treasury by a king who is without funds, and is plunged into sudden financial straits. We may conveniently group the various methods suggested by the author under the following heads:—

- A. 'Benevolence,' 'Auflegung' (*pranaya*), which is to the levied 'once and not twice.'
- B. Miscellaneous methods of raising the revenue.

As regards the first group the benevolences are described as consisting of three distinct kinds, *viz.*, those from the cultivators (*karṣakas*), those from the dealers and craftsmen (*vya-vahārins*) and those from the breeders of animals (*yonipoṣakas*).

In connection with the first class, the Arthaśāstra lays down what may be called a schedule of rates as follows :—

1. Grain	...	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{4}$
2. Wild rice ; ¹ merchandise in cotton, lac, linen,	}				...
bark of trees, wool, silk, medicinal herbs,					
scents, flowers, fruits and vegetables,					
wood, bamboo, fresh and dried meat					
3. Ivory and skins	...	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{2}$

In so far as these items and principally the first item are concerned, they are explained and amplified by the author in the immediately preceding lines. The king, we are told, should beg from the cultivators $\frac{1}{3}$ or $\frac{1}{2}$ of the crop when the tract, be it large or small in extent, has sources of water-supply independent of rain-water² and produces a rich harvest. For tracts of intermediate or poor quality the demand should be according to the outturn. No demand, however, should be made from persons usefully employed in the work of fortification and irrigation-works, of trade-routes and colonisation of waste lands, of mines and forests.³ With regard to the persons colonising lands the king should even grant them grains, cattle, cash and the like, and he should purchase from them for cash $\frac{1}{4}$ of the grain that is left over after providing

¹ *Vanyānām*, tr. as above by Gaṇ. The interpretation of Sh. ('forest produce') and of M. and Breloer ('Walderzeugnisse') is contradicted by the fact that forest products (*araṇyajātam*) are expressly excluded from the levy of benevolences.

² Read *adevamātrīkam* with M. instead of *deva*° of Sh. and Jolly-Schmidt.

³ The above passage has been construed in four different ways; for while Sh. connects *yathāsāram* with the preceding sentence and *madhyamam*° with the following, Gaṇ. connects *yathāsāram madhyamam* with the preceding sentence and M. connects *yathāsāram madhyamam durgā*° with the same, while Jolly-Schmidt connects *yathāsāram* with the following sentence. I follow Gaṇ. whose construction gives the best sense.

for seeds and provisions.¹ The king should grant exemption in the case of forest products and the property of learned Brāhmaṇas. When the above means of filling the treasury fails, the agents of the *samāhartā* should make the cultivators sow the seeds in summer. At the sowing season the latter should be made to enter into a written agreement undertaking to pay double the amount of the crops destroyed through their negligence. When the crops are ripe, they should be forbidden to take away ripe and unripe crop, the penalty for theft of corn ranging from a fine of eight times the value to death.

A careful consideration of the above suggests some important reflections. The benevolence, it will be observed, is not assessed at a uniform rate of $\frac{1}{4}$, but varies according to the nature of the soil. With the maximum rate, which is declared to be $\frac{1}{3}$ or $\frac{1}{4}$, may be compared the highest rate of the agricultural tax in Manu, viz., $\frac{1}{4}$.² To the levy of the emergency tax upon cultivators the Arthaśāstra makes numerous exceptions, persons employed in what may be called utility services as well as those engaged in colonising waste lands being altogether exempted from it. In so far as the settlers of new lands are concerned, it will be seen that they are required to be furnished with the necessary capital in the shape of provisions, implements and the like. This is quite in keeping with the policy of the Arthaśāstra, which elsewhere³ requires the king to make advances of money to the new settlers. The further provision that the king is to purchase for cash $\frac{1}{4}$ of the surplus outturn was obviously intended to provide the settlers with their much needed cash. Moreover, the exemption of the learned Brāhmaṇas from the emergency tax is thoroughly in accordance with the spirit of the Arthaśāstra,

¹ The above is usually (Gan., M. and Breloer) tr. as $\frac{1}{4}$ of the grain and what is left over after providing for seeds and provisions.

² See below, p. 131.

³ V, 3.

which elsewhere¹ contemplates the grant of tax-free lands to certain classes of Brāhmaṇas by the king. It is, however, difficult to understand how all these exemptions and specially the advances could be possible for a king who is himself in sore financial straits. As a last resort, the Arthaśāstra contemplates what virtually amounts to a compulsory raising of the second crops by the peasants under a system akin to the modern indentures. This is important as illustrating the extreme length to which the rights of the cultivators could be encroached upon by the State during emergencies.

As regards the class of benevolences from dealers and craftsmen, the Arthaśāstra lays down a schedule of rates as follows :—

1. Dealers in gold, silver, diamonds,
precious stones, pearls, corals,
horses and elephants ... Tax (*kara*) of 50 per cent.
2. Dealers in threads, garments,
copper, brass, bronze, scents,
medicines and wines ... Ditto of 40 per cent.
3. Dealers in grains, liquids, base
metals and carts ... Ditto of 30 per cent.
4. Dealers in glass and chief
craftsmen ... Ditto of 20 per cent.
5. Inferior craftsmen ... Ditto of 10 per cent.
6. Dealers in wood, bamboo,
stones, earthenware, cooked
rice and green vegetables ... Ditto of 5 per cent.
7. Actors and prostitutes ... $\frac{1}{2}$ their wages.

Besides the above, tradesmen not engaged in any kind of work are required to be charged with the tax in cash.²

¹ II, 1.

² The above follows the reading and trans. of Gap. Other trs. (with a different reading) are: 'The entire property of goldsmiths shall be taken possession of' (Sh.) and 'die zu Geldsteuern Fähigen sollen sie tüchtig schröpfen' (M).

With regard to the last class of benevolences the Arthaśāstra mentions the following scale of charges :—

(1) Breeders of cocks and pigs	...	...	$\frac{1}{2}$
(2) Breeders of small animals	...	...	$\frac{1}{6}$
(3) Breeders of cows, buffaloes, mules, asses and camels	...	...	$\frac{1}{10}$

Besides the above, keepers of prostitutes are required to procure supplies for the king's treasury by employing women in the king's service who are noted for their youth and beauty.

While the charges mentioned in the foregoing paragraphs are at least connected with specific heads of revenue, those we have to mention in the present place are independent of any such connection, and are altogether irregular in their character. When the benevolences fail, says Kauṭilya, the *samāhartā* ('Obereinnehmer') is to invite donations from the inhabitants of the kingdom under pretext of performing some work. In this connection Kauṭilya introduces us to some old Indian methods of raising subscriptions from the public. The secret agents, we are told, should first pay large amounts, and then the donations should be invited from the public: those who pay a small amount are to be blamed by a specific class of spies, while those who contribute gold are to be rewarded with offices, umbrellas, turbans and ornaments. While the above method of raising money for the royal treasury is open to little or no moral objection, the same cannot be said of the methods that follow immediately. The wealth of heretics and corporate bodies, that of religious establishments and that which is not required for the use of learned Brāhmanas, are to be appropriated for the king by approved agents under a suitable pretext. Moreover, the Superintendent of religious establishments is to collect in one heap the treasures of temples belonging to the city as well as

the country-part and appropriate them in the same fashion. He may also set up a sacred altar at night or establish in a place of reputed sanctity what purports to have sprung from the earth,¹ and he may earn his means of subsistence by introducing fairs and festive assemblies. Or he may collect money from the people under pretext of propitiating a pretended monster demanding tribute of men from a concealed place in a tree. Or else he may collect money by showing a many-headed serpent in a well provided with a subterranean passage.

Equally fraudulent with the above is the method of raising money that is suggested immediately thereafter. A spy disguised as a trader, we are told, is to start business after equipping himself with a considerable stock of merchandise and number of associates. When he has waxed rich with his stock of merchandise, the proceeds of sale as well as the deposits and loans, the king is to cause him to be robbed of the same during night-time. The same practices may be observed by the Examiner of coins and the State goldsmith. Or else a spy masquerading as a merchant may collect quantities of gold and silver ware, or obtain on loan quantities of bullion and specie on suitable pretexts and thereafter the king as before is to rob him of his property at night.

The last method of raising revenue that is mentioned in the present connection is founded upon force. It is concerned with various ways of calculated ingenuity and cruelty for entrapping seditious persons by the agency of spies who frequently act as *agents provocateurs*. One or two examples out of many will suffice to illustrate this point. The spies, we are told, may cause the seditious to be infatuated with

¹ The above follows the reading and explanation of Gan. The reading and versions of Sh. and M. are completely different

females disguised as chaste women, and having taken them in the houses of those women may procure the confiscation of all their possessions. When seditious persons of high families quarrel with each other, poisoners being directed thereto may poison one of them, and the other may be charged with the offence of murder. Or a spy acting as a servant of the seditious person may mix up counterfeit coins with the money he receives as his wages, and thus expose his master. The only redeeming feature in this picture of unrelieved gloom is the direction that measures like the above should be applied against the seditious as well as the impious, and not against others.

The above rules, along with those of a similar character to be mentioned presently, constitute, it is not too much to say, a land-mark in the history of Hindu financial speculation, not to say, the history of Hindu intellectual development. They evidently imply that while fixed heads of revenue with standard rates should be followed in normal times, the State was justified in adopting every species of force and fraud in dealing with grave emergencies. Thus Politics, which in the Arthaśāstra is treated as an independent branch of knowledge apart from the Canon, is further divorced from morality and religion. For the rest, it may be stated that the above rules of the Arthaśāstra, in so far as their general character and tendencies are concerned, may be fitly matched with the methods of financial oppression known to the other countries of the East as well as the West, of antiquity as well as modern times. A singular interest, however, attaches in the Indian system to the methods of unabashed appropriation of temple treasures and exploitation of popular religious beliefs in the interest of the State treasury.

When we turn to the literature of the Sacred Law and the Epics we find that the rules relating to the conduct of the king during emergencies form part of a well recognised branch of law called 'duties in time of distress' (*āpaddharma*).

To take a few examples, Manu says in one place¹ that the Kṣatriya who takes even $\frac{1}{4}$ of the crop in times of distress is exempted from sin, provided he protects his subjects to the best of his ability. This passage is usually taken to mean that the king is justified in demanding $\frac{1}{4}$ of the produce instead of the usual $\frac{1}{8}$, during emergencies of the State.² In the same context³ we are told that the Kṣatriya who protects the Vaiśyas by his weapons may collect from them the proper agricultural tax. This is said to consist of two charges, *viz.*, the *bali* of $\frac{1}{8}$ of the grain, and the *śulka* of $\frac{1}{20}$ amounting at least to one copper coin (*kārṣāpaṇa*), the normal rates in these cases being according to the commentators $\frac{1}{12}$ and $\frac{1}{60}$ respectively.⁴ On the other hand the Śūdras, the craftsmen and the artisans, it is said, benefit the king by service. This means, according to most of the commentators, that the king is not justified, even during times of distress, in imposing any tax upon the above classes, but may exact some additional service from them over and above their obligation of performing one piece of work a month.

¹ X, 118.

² The interpretation of the whole passage given above follows the authority of Medhātithi, Govindarāja, Kullūka and Raghavānanda. Far different is the explanation of Sarvajña-Nārayāṇa and Nandana. According to them the tax on grain is here stated to be $\frac{1}{4}$ in the case of Śūdras and $\frac{1}{8}$ in the case of Vaiśyas, and the tax on other things is stated to be at least one *kārṣāpaṇa* out of twenty, while the artisans who work for wages are required to pay their contribution at the same rate. This explanation may be opposed on the following grounds:—(a) differential rates of the agricultural tax for the different castes are unknown to any other authority; (b) the usual rate of the duty on goods is $\frac{1}{20}$ which, therefore, cannot be the emergency rate as well; (c) the minimum limit of taxation, *viz.*, one *kārṣāpaṇa*, is attested by a verse of Manu quoted in Vas., XIX, 31.

³ Manu, X, 119-120.

⁴ Actually, however, Manu prescribes (VII, 130) three alternative rates of the duty, *viz.*, $\frac{1}{8}$, $\frac{1}{4}$ and $\frac{1}{12}$ during normal times.

If the methods of financial exaction in Manu partake of the nature of enhancement of the normal rates of revenue under specified heads, far different is the case with those advocated in the *rājadharmā* and *āpaddharma* sections of the *Mahābhārata*. The question is broadly taken up in a chapter of the *Śāntiparvan*¹ which the commentators aptly explain to be of the nature of an aphorism with reference to the immediately following section on *āpaddharma*. There the warrior-sage Bhīṣma, asked as to what course the king should pursue when his friends are declining and foes are increasing, when his treasury is exhausted and he has no troops, when his ministers and assistants are wicked and his counsels are divulged, replies unenigmatically that the king should seize the wealth of all persons other than that of ascetics and Brāhmaṇas. This dangerous doctrine is sought to be supported by a large array of arguments based upon the supreme law of self-preservation, the normal rule of existence and above all the paramount importance of the State, but it is unnecessary to repeat them here.² The above doctrine is inculcated likewise in the following chapters, which are expressly concerned with the duties in times of distress. Thus in one place³ what purports to be an old verse is quoted to the effect that the king may not take the wealth of those devoted to the performance of sacrifices and the wealth of temples, but he is entitled to seize the wealth of robbers and of those who do not perform any religious acts. In this connection the treasury (*kośa*) is magnified again and again as the cream of all things. The *kośa*, it is said, is the root of the army, the army is the root of all duties, duties are the root of the people: the *kośa* is the source of acquisition of virtue, desire and salvation.

¹ Ch. 130.

² For a full account see the author's *Hindu Political Theories*, 2nd ed., pp. 155-158.

³ *Ibid*, Ch. 136. 1-2.

Methods of financial exaction similar to the above, but not identical, are laid down in the later literature of Polity. In the *Nītivākyāṃṛtam* ('Nectar of the Maxims of Polity') written by the Jaina Somadeva in the tenth century after Christ, the king with depleted treasury is recommended¹ to adopt the following measures for filling the same. He is to appropriate what is left over from the wealth of religious foundations, Brāhmaṇas and merchants, after providing for the expenses of religious service, performance of sacrifices and support of kinsmen respectively: he is to take the wealth of rich widows, judicial officers,² village headmen, courtesans, guilds and heretics: he is to beg a share of the wealth belonging to the prosperous inhabitants of the city and the country-part: he is to wait upon his ministers, his chaplain and the vassal kings of unbroken fortunes. Here, it will be noted, the rules of financial exaction are of a sufficiently sweeping and comprehensive character. They imply the victimization of nearly every class of people and even the appropriation of temple treasures for the benefit of the king's treasury. Moreover, there is no pretence of confining within any definite limits the financial exactions which are practically unlimited in extent.³

Lastly, we may mention that the late *Nīti* work called the *Śukranīti* also inculcates sundry methods of raising the emergency revenue. The king, we are told in one place,⁴ must not increase the revenue, when there is no distress, out of excessive impositions of fines, the agricultural tax, as well as tolls

¹ XXI, 14.

² *Niyogins* in the original, tr. as above by the commentator.

³ Very similar to the above is a text of *Sukra* quoted by the unknown commentator in connection with the present text. This passage, however, is not found in the existing *Sukranīti*.

⁴ IV, 2. 9.

and duties, nor out of the tax from places of pilgrimage and from temples. This evidently implies that the collection of the charges here mentioned was permissible during the king's emergencies. In the same context we are definitely told that when the king is engaged in providing for his troops for the purpose of destroying his enemy, he may raise enhanced rates of fines, tolls and the like from the people.¹ The king in distress may seize the wealth of rich people after giving them an allowance for subsistence (*bhṛti*), but he must return the same with interest after he has overcome his danger. We have here almost a unique instance in the Hindu technical literature, of the levy of compulsory loans from the subjects by the State during emergencies.

We may fittingly conclude this chapter by quoting an early reference in a Buddhist collection of stories to the employment of State loans. A story in the *Avadānaśataka* ² records the tradition that a merchant advanced a loan of gold coins (*suvarṇas*) to Prasenajit, king of Kosala, to help him in his war with the king of Magadha.

¹ In *Sukra* IV, [2. 18 ff. in connection with a classification of kings into three grades, we are told that the bad king is one who increases his revenue out of fines, and out of tax from places of pilgrimage and temples. This evidently applies to the king who had recourse to such methods of exaction during normal times.

² P. 56, J. S. Speyer's ed.

CHAPTER VII

CLASSES EXEMPTED FROM TAXATION—UNTAXABLE PROPERTY.

In the system of the Law-books (*Smṛtis*) and to a less extent that of the works on Polity (*Nīti*) by far the most important class of persons exempted from taxation is the class of *Brāhmaṇas*, and specially the learned *Brāhmaṇas*. With the rules relating to the *Brāhmaṇa*'s immunity are often joined together maxims and principles of astonishing pretensions on behalf of the favoured class. To begin with the aphoristic Law-books, *Vas.*,¹ while recommending that the just king may take of wealth from his subjects, expressly makes an exception in favour of the *Brāhmaṇas*. Elsewhere² *Vas.* includes the learned *Brāhmaṇa* in a list of persons who are immune from taxation (*akara*), no doubt, as the commentator remarks, by way of emphasising his special claim for exemption. He also quotes in this connection a verse of *Manu* to the effect that the learned *Brāhmaṇa* along with other specified classes is not to be liable to the *śulka*.³ In justifying the *Brāhmaṇa*'s claim for exemption in the first case, *Vas.* quotes three Vedic texts to the effect that the king shares

¹ I, 42-43.

² XIX, 23.

³ Here *śulka* must evidently be understood in the general sense of taxes, for among those who are exempted from it in the same text are mentioned the infant, the messenger, what is acquired by alms and what is left over after robbery and the like. For other instances of this general sense of the term see the author's paper '*Some Hindu Fiscal Terms discussed*,' *loc. cit.*

‡ of the Brāhmaṇa's spiritual merit acquired by the performance of sacrifices and charitable works, that the Brāhmaṇa is not to be devoured because he makes the Vedas prosper and secures immunity from danger, and lastly, that Soma is the king of the Brāhmaṇas. Like Vas., Āpast.¹ includes the learned Brāhmaṇa in a list of persons exempted from taxation, while Viṣṇu² expressly forbids taxes to be levied on the Brāhmaṇas on the ground that they pay their tax in virtuous acts.

The rules of the Arthaśāstra, so far as they go, are in accord with those of the Smṛtis above mentioned. The Arthaśāstra³ contemplates the king who is about to settle a new or re-settle an old territory, as making grants of land, that are immune from taxes and fines and accompanied with rich gifts, to certain classes of Brāhmaṇas: these comprise the sacrificial priest, the spiritual preceptor, the chaplain (*purohita*) and the learned Brāhmaṇa. This evidently implies, as we have already suggested, that the lands of the Brāhmaṇas were normally exempted from taxation. Again, as we have seen elsewhere, Kauṭilya, while laying down the methods of filling the treasury during emergencies, expressly requires that the property of the learned Brāhmaṇa should be exempted from benevolences and from other irregular exactions. We may also mention without comment that the Arthaśāstra elsewhere⁴ imposes a small fine for the collection of tolls and other duties from the Brāhmaṇas.

The rule regarding the Brāhmaṇa's immunity from taxation receives some further degree of development in the metrical Smṛtis. According to a famous text of Manu⁵ the king, though dying with want, must not collect taxes (*kara*) from learned Brāhmaṇas, and no Brāhmaṇa residing within his

¹ II, 10.26. 10.² III, 26-27.³ II, 1.⁴ III, 20.⁵ VII, 133.

kingdom should suffer from hunger. This is sought to be justified on the principle of *quid pro quid*, for we are told that the virtuous act which the Brāhmaṇa performs daily under the king's protection contributes to the increase of the king's life, wealth and kingdom.¹ In the *rājadharmā* and *āpaddharma* sections of the Mahābhārata, as we have seen, a practical application of the above maxim is given in the form that the king may take the wealth of all persons other than the Brāhmaṇas and ascetics during times of distress.² Nār.³ introduces an innovation by observing that the property of the learned Brāhmaṇas which is required for household use is exempted from *śulka*, but not that which is used for purposes of trade. This evidently involves a modification of the earlier rule exempting all wealth of the learned Brāhmaṇa from *śulka*. Bṛhaspati⁴ on the other hand contents himself by saying that the king should grant houses and lands to the Brāhmaṇas with immunity from taxation.

Not only is the Brāhmaṇa contemplated in the above to be exempt from taxation, but his property, as we have seen,⁵ is declared by all our authorities to be incapable of lapsing to the king even in the event of complete failure of heirs. In this connection Manu declares⁶ the general rule that the Brāhmaṇa's property is never to be taken by the king, while that of other classes may be taken over for failure of heirs. We have further observed that the Smṛtis from first to last

¹ In Manu VIII, 394, the privilege of exemption from all taxation is extended to the persons attending the learned Brāhmaṇas. Elsewhere (VIII, 407) the Brāhmaṇa is specifically exempted from payment of toll at the river-crossing. The latter rule is repeated in Nār. (XVIII, 38).

² Above, p. 133.

³ Quoted in *Vivādaratnākara*, p. 178, *Viramitrodaya*, p. 423, and Mādhava's commentary on Parāśara, Bibl. Ind. ed., p. 349.

⁴ Quoted, *Vivādaratnākara*, p. 178.

⁵ See above, pp. 112-113.

⁶ IX, 189.

as well as the Arthaśāstra lay down the general rule that when a Brāhmaṇa finds a hidden treasure, he is to keep the whole of it, while other persons on finding the same are to make it over to the king. It is in connection with this rule that Manu¹ as well as Yāj.² lays down the striking doctrine that the Brāhmaṇa is the lord of everything.

Besides the Brāhmaṇas, a miscellaneous group of persons is often mentioned in the Smṛtis as immune from taxation. Thus in the above-mentioned list of exempted persons mentioned by Vas.³ are included—

- (1) the king's man (*rājapumān*),
- (2) the helpless,
- (3) one who has renounced the world,
- (4) the infant and the old,
- (5) the young man who is a student (*taruṇa*),
- (6) the newly confined women, widows who return to their former families, maidens and wives of servants.

Some of these classes also figure in the short list of persons exempted from *śulka*, which Vas. quotes from Manu.⁴ The latter, *e. g.*, includes besides the learned Brāhmaṇa

- (1) the infant,
- (2) the messenger,
- (3) one who has renounced the world.

Similar to the longer list of Vas., but not identical with it, is the group of exempted persons (*akara*) mentioned by Āpast.⁵ This comprises, besides the learned Brāhmaṇa,—

- (1) women of all classes,
- (2) boys before attaining the signs of manhood,
- (3) those who live (with preceptors) for study,
- (4) the ascetics who are virtuous,

¹ VIII, 37.

² II, 34.

³ XIX, 23-24.

⁴ See above, p. 136.

⁵ II, 10.26 ; 10-17.

- (5) the Śūdras ' who live by washing the feet of other classes, '
- (6) the blind, the dumb, the deaf and the diseased,
- (7) those who are forbidden to acquire property by the rules of their order.

On comparing the above two lists it appears that they have more or less in common the class of women,¹ the infant, the student, and the ascetic.² Vas., however, has in addition the class of the king's servants, while Āpast. adds that of the Śūdras and some unnamed sects.

The above rules are reproduced generally on a smaller scale in the metrical Smṛtis. In the list of persons exempted by Manu from the payment of all taxes are included³ the blind, the idiot, the cripple who moves with the help of a board and the man who is seventy years old. These evidently correspond to the blind, the diseased and the aged persons of the earlier lists. Elsewhere⁴ Manu gives a list of persons exempted from tolls at the river-crossings, which comprises besides the Brāhmaṇa and the Vedic student—

- (1) the woman who has been pregnant for two months or more,
- (2) one who has left the order of householders,
- (3) the hermit.

With this may be compared the rule of Viṣṇu⁵ who imposes a fine of ten *panas* for the collection of *śulka* from the following :—

- (1) the Vedic student,
- (2) the hermit in the forest (*vānaprastha*),

¹ The scope of Āpast.'s rule, however, is more comprehensive than that of Vas.

² Āpast. introduces a limiting qualification by adding the word *dharmapaṇḍit* (' virtuous ') before ascetics.

³ VIII, 394.

⁴ *Ibid*, 407.

⁵ V, 132.

- (3) the ascetic,
- (4) the pregnant woman,
- (5) the mendicant monk (*tirthānusārin*).

Coming now to the head of untaxable property we may first point to the verse of Manu quoted by Vas.,¹ which has been referred to above. It is to the effect that the *śulka* (apparently used in the general sense of tax) is not to be imposed *inter alia* upon articles worth less than one copper coin (*kārṣāpaṇa*), the earnings of craftsmanship, the receipts from alms, the remnant of stolen property and the articles required for the performance of sacrifice. With this may be compared the narrower rule of the Arthaśāstra,² viz., that the *śulka* (in the technical sense of octroi duty) is not to be imposed upon articles required for marriage, for a bride going to her husband's place, for presentation, for the performance of the worship of gods, for the ceremony of investiture with the sacred thread and so on. It will also be remembered that Manu contemplates the exemption of sums less than one *kārṣāpaṇa* even during the king's emergencies.³

¹ XIX, 37.

³ Above, p. 132.

² II, 21.

CHAPTER VIII

REVENUE ADMINISTRATION.

We propose in the present chapter to describe the important branch of organisation of the revenue administration such as we find it reflected in the Hindu technical literature on polity. As usual, the Arthasāstra gives us a connected and comprehensive account of a subject that is treated in the sections on Polity in the Smṛtis in a general and almost cursory fashion. Nevertheless the references in the Smṛtis, vague and indefinite as they often are, are of value as corroborating or supplementing the far more detailed description of the Arthasāstra treatise.

It will be convenient for us to consider our present subject under its two broad and natural divisions of central and local administration. Beginning with the former we notice at the outset that the king is regarded as the head of the financial administration, as indeed of other branches as well. The opinion of the theorists, however, was divided as regards the proper degree of his immediate control over the department of finance. On the one hand Bhāradvāja, an old Arthasāstra teacher quoted by Kauṭilya,¹ contemplated the minister (*amātya*) as being vested with the exclusive and entire control over finance. On the other hand Kauṭilya held ² that the king should keep under his control the departments of the army and treasury, for internal troubles were more dangerous than external troubles and resembled the danger from snakes. A variant of Kauṭilya's rule occurs in Manu,³ who declares that the army depends upon the minister (*amātya*), while the

¹ VIII, 1.

² VIII, 2.

³ VII, 65.

treasury and the country depend upon the king. It will be observed that in either case the immediate control of the treasury is vested in the hands of the king. In thorough accord with this rule the Arthaśāstra¹ provides for the king's daily audit of income and expenditure during the first eighth part of the day, while Manu² enjoins the king's daily inspection of the income and expenditure, the treasury and the like.³

The Arthaśāstra does not specify the ministers of the State Council (*mantrins*) as participating in the king's work of revenue administration and control. But Manu⁴ expressly enjoins that the king should frequently consult his ministers (*sachivas*), among other things, on affairs relating to the treasury (*sthāna*), the sources of revenue (*samudaya*) and the like. On the other hand the Arthaśāstra mentions two high officials called the *samāhartā* and the *sannidhātā*⁵ who are practically vested with the immediate control of the whole financial administration. Both these officers occupy an equal status, being included⁶ in the grade of persons receiving a salary of twenty-four thousand silver coins (*paṇas*). Both also agree in combining financial with other functions of a different character.

The *samāhartā*, according to the description of his functions in the Arthaśāstra, combined certain functions of police and criminal justice with those of finance. In the former capacity he has to watch, through the ubiquitous agency of spies, the conduct of cultivators, hermits, merchants and

¹ I, 19.

² VIII, 419.

³ Yāj. similarly, while fixing the king's daily routine, sets apart (I, 327) a portion of the day for his inspection of the income and expenditure.

⁴ VII, 56.

⁵ Tr. as 'treasurer' or 'finance minister' (Monahan, *Early History*, p. 43), 'Reichsschatzverwalter' (M., p. 77, etc.).

⁶ Kauṭ., V, 2.

superintendents, as well as the movements of thieves, the enemies' emissaries and the desperadoes.¹ He has also to bring to book thirteen specified classes of persons living by under-hand means, and either banish them or impose a suitable fine.² In his financial capacity the *samāhartā's* functions practically extend over the whole range of State income and expenditure. Thus in the first place he has, as we have seen elsewhere, to look after seven specified constituents of State income, *viz.*, the groups technically called the fortified city (*durga*), the country-part (*rāṣṭra*), the mines, the irrigation works, the forests, the herds, and the trade-routes. In the same context we are told that the *samāhartā* should look after six other branches of business, *viz.*, those technically called 'what is to be done' (*karanīyam*), 'what is done' (*siddham*), 'what remains to be done' (*śeṣam*), income (*āya*), expenditure (*vyaya*) and the balance (*nīvī*). In these ways, so runs the conclusion of the chapter,³ the *samāhartā* should raise the revenue, increasing the income and diminishing the expenditure while counteracting the reverse. In so far as the *samāhartā's* methods of supervision over the groups called 'country-part' and 'trade-route' are concerned, they are explained by Kautilya in another place⁴ to which reference has been made already. There we are told that the *samāhartā* should in effect prepare a great revenue-roll of the kingdom specifying the lands exempted from the revenue and those liable to service in lieu of the same, as well as the receipts from the villages under the several heads of rice, cattle, bullion, forest-produce and forced labour. Under his direction the *gopa* ('Revieraufseher') is to prepare various registers and census lists of the villages. Furthermore, spies disguised as merchants should inspect, obviously under the *samāhartā's* direction, the amount and value of the various

¹ Kaut., II, 35.

² *Ibid.*, IV, 4.

³ *Ibid.*, II, 6.

⁴ II, 35.

specified classes of royal merchandise, as well as the expenses that are incurred for the foreign merchandise that is obtained in return for the same. In addition to the above duties the *samāhartā*, lastly, has to raise the revenue for the king's treasury during grave emergencies. On such occasions his agents are to collect benevolences (*pranayas*) from the cultivators and other classes of persons, and he is expected as a last resort to have recourse to the compulsory raising of additional crops by the cultivators.¹

The *sannidhātā* seems from the description of his duties to combine the work of construction (and superintendence) of certain government buildings with that of deposit of various articles in the royal storehouse. Thus in the chapter relating to the duties of this officer² we are told that the *sannidhātā* should look after the erection of the treasury (*kośagrha*), the warehouse (*paṇyagrha*), the storehouses for grains (*koṣṭhāgārā*) and for forest-products (*kupyagrha*), the armoury (*āyudhāgāra*), the court of justice (*dharmasthīya*), the secretariat (*mahāmātrīya*) and the jail (*bandhanāgāra*). This is accompanied by a series of minute directions relating to the construction of the buildings. In the same connection we are told that the *sannidhātā* with his staff of clerks is to receive into the treasury new as well as old gems, articles of great as well as of little value and forest-products (*kupya*): he is to receive money that has been tested by the Examiner of coins: he should also receive new rice as well as merchandise, and even weapons. Special precautions are enjoined upon him for ensuring receipts of goods of the proper quality. What amount of expert knowledge was expected from him will appear from the concluding statement, namely, that he should be so much conversant with revenue derived from the interior as well as the outside of the kingdom, as to be able to furnish information for the last hundred years, and show the resulting

¹ Cf. above, pp. 125-127.

² II, 5.

balance. This notable passage seems to suggest the existence of a regular system of annual statistical returns of the State revenue.

Some further light is thrown upon the respective functions of the *samāhartā* and the *sannidhātā* by a discussion regarding the relative seriousness of their oppressions.¹ According to an unnamed Arthaśāstra teacher the *sannidhātā* oppresses the people through the non-acknowledgment of what has been performed by others and by means of fines,² while the *samāhartā* presiding over his officers receives only the revenue brought before him. According to Kautilya, on the other hand, the *sannidhātā* receives only what has been prepared by others, and must be brought into the royal treasury,³ but the *samāhartā* first provides for his own interest, and then serves or ruins the interest of the king, and he acts arbitrarily as regards the collection of foreign goods.⁴

Below the *samāhartā* and the *sannidhātā* who are entrusted with the supervision of the entire revenue administration stands in the scheme of the Arthaśāstra a class of *adhyakṣas* ('Superin-

¹ Kauṭ VIII, 4.

² The above follows the tr. of M. (p. 511) who aptly compares *kṛtavidūṣaṇātyayābhyām* with the same term occurring in Kauṭ VII, 6, as the technical designation of the violation of an agreement already made. Other trs. are 'weil er [die Vorräte] fehlerhaft werden und zugrunde gehen lässt' (Stein, p. 210); 'spoiling works and inflicting fines' (Sh.): 'by attributing defects to manufactured articles like ornaments and so forth, and imputing lapse of time' (Gaṇ.). M.'s explanation is the simplest and most natural.

³ Tr. as above by M. Other trs. are 'der sannidhātā empfängt das, was in den schatz kommen soll, nachdem es durch andere in [fertigen] Zustand gebracht worden ist' (Stein, *loc. cit.*); 'the *sannidhātā* receives only such articles suitable for admission into the royal treasury as are certified by examiners' (Gaṇ.).

⁴ The above follows the trs. of Stein and M. Other trs. of the last extract are 'proceeds as he pleases to seize the property of others' (Sh.) and 'because he is his own master as regards the collection of taxes' (Gaṇ.).

tendents,' 'Aufseher'). They are charged with specific departments of administration usually involving the collection or receipt of distinct branches of revenue. The Second Book of the Arthaśāstra, which bears the significant title of 'Duties of the Superintendents,' mentions a list of no less than twenty-eight¹ such officers in charge of as many departments. The list consists of the Superintendents of—

- | | |
|--|------------------------------|
| 1. The 'Accounts office' (akṣapaṭāla). | 14. Tolls and octroi duties. |
| 2. The Treasury. | 15. Spinning and Weaving. |
| 3. Mines. | 16. Agriculture. |
| 4. Metals. | 17. Intoxicating drinks. |
| 5. The Mint. | 18. Slaughter-house. |
| 6. Salt. | 19. Courtesans. |
| 7. Gold. | 20. Shipping. |
| 8. The Store-house for grains. | 21. Cattle. |
| 9. The royal merchandise. | 22. Horses. |
| 10. Forest produce. | 23. Elephants. |
| 11. The armoury. | 24. Chariots. |
| 12. Weights and measures of capacity. | 25. Infantry. |
| 13. Measurement of time and place. | 26. Seals and passports. |
| | 27. Pastures. |
| | 28. Religious Institutions. |

In addition to the above the Arthaśāstra elsewhere mentions the Superintendents of—

1. Elephant-forests.
2. Trade (*saṁsthā*).
3. Gambling.
4. Jails.
5. Ports.

To these have to be added other officers, evidently of a lower rank, whose duties involve the collection of specific branches

¹ The list in Monahan (*Early History*, p. 47) has only twenty-six names.

of revenue. Such, *e.g.*, are the *antapāla* ('Boundary officer,' 'Grenzaufseher'), the *nadīpāla* ('Guardian of rivers'), *chorarajjū* ('Catcher of thieves'), the *tarika* (Ferryman) and the *sauvarṇika* (State goldsmith).

In so far as the revenue functions of the officers above mentioned are concerned, they have been dealt with, it is believed, with sufficient fulness in the foregoing pages. But a few additional points may be here noticed. The Arthaśāstra mentions in one place¹ a curious list of four tests, *viz.*, 'the virtue-test,' 'the wealth-test,' 'the lust-test,' and 'the fear-test,' which the king should apply for making selections out of the general body of officials (*amātya*). In so far as the officers relating to the revenue administration are concerned, it is of interest to note that the Arthaśāstra contemplates the employment of those purified by the wealth-test in the collective work of the *samāhartā* and the *sannidhātā*, while those who have failed in all the tests are to be employed in mines, forests and the State workshops. With reference to this point it may be remarked that however crude the methods of selection may appear to our modern eyes, they at least involve the application of a sound principle, namely, that of specialisation of functions for the State offices.

The Arthaśāstra mentions in connection with nearly all the above mentioned functionaries sets of rules relating to what may be called the working of the departments concerned. These rules often remind us, in their studied reference to detail and even in the use of various technical terms, of the administrative manuals relating to the various departments of government that are in vogue in British India at present.² This comparison may serve to show the high

¹ I-10.

² To take one striking example the group of 'forest produce' (*kupya*) in the Arthaśāstra (II, 17) comprises, 'timbers and bamboos of different

degree of technical advancement which the administrative arrangements had reached at least in the theoretical works on Polity in Ancient India.

We look in vain in the *Smṛtis* for analogues of the offices with distinct titles and clearly defined duties, that are mentioned in the *Arthaśāstra*. But a few general parallels may be traced. Manu¹ mentions Superintendents (*adhyakṣas*) of various kinds, who are to supervise the acts of persons performing the king's business. Elsewhere² he mentions officials (*amātyas*) having, among other things, the merit of being well qualified to collect the revenue. Yāj.³ likewise refers to Superintendents who are required to apply themselves to the work of income and expenditure. Along with these may be mentioned the 'trusted persons' or 'officials' whom the king according to Viṣṇu⁴ and the *Mahābhārata*⁵ is to

kinds, canes and other creepers, barks and fibres, leaves and flowers, medicinal roots and fruits, hides and skins, bones, sinews, teeth, horns, hoofs, and tails of various animals, utensils of cane, bark and clay, charcoal, ashes, firewood and fodder, wild beasts and birds for menageries' besides certain metals, such as iron, tin, lead and copper (Monahan, *Early History*, p. 58). With this cf. Indian Forest Act, 1878, Sec. 2:— 'Forest produce includes—(a) the following, whether found in or brought from a forest or not, that is to say,—timber, charcoal, caoutchouc, catechus, wood-oil, resin, natural varnish, bark, lac, *mahua* flowers, *mahua* seeds, myrobolans, and (b) the following, when found in or brought from a forest—(i) trees and leaves, flowers and fruits, and all other parts or produce, not hereinbefore mentioned, of trees, (ii) plants not being trees (including grass, creepers, weeds and moss), and all parts or produce of such plants, (iii) wild animals and skins, tusks, horns, bones, silk, cocoons, honey and wax and all other parts or produce of animals, (iv) peat, surface soil, rock and minerals (including lime-stone, laterite, mineral oils and all products of mines or quarries.'

¹ VII, 81.

² VII, 60.

³ I, 322.

⁴ III, 16.

⁵ XII, 69, 29.

employ in mines, tolls and ferry duties, salt-works and elephant-forests. They may also be compared with 'the brave, the high-born, the skilful and the pure' ministers, who, according to Manu,¹ should be employed on work connected with the revenue, such as mines and State factories. In the above the Superintendents broadly correspond to the class of officials called by the same title in the Arthaśāstra, while the other officials who are placed in charge of mines, factories and the like represent the Superintendents specifically connected in the Arthaśāstra with those branches. Among other classes of officials in the Smṛtis we may mention the trusted persons whom Manu² requires the king to appoint for the collection of the annual agricultural tax (*bali*), as well as the administrative agents (*vyāpṛtas*) whom Yāj.³ contemplates as daily bringing over money to the king for deposit in the treasury. We may also mention that the Mahābhārata⁴ mentions the accountants (*gaṇakas*) and the clerks (*lekhaṇakas*) whose duty is to perform the daily work in connection with income and expenditure.

✓ Coming to the head of local revenue administration it will be sufficient for our present purpose to confine our attention to its most important branch, namely, that concerned with the administration of the land-revenue. The Arthaśāstra, as we have seen,⁵ knows a chain of officers called *gopas* and *sthānika*, of whom the former, being placed in charge of five or ten villages, are required to prepare various registers and census lists, while the latter, being in charge of $\frac{1}{4}$ of the kingdom, are required to do the same for their wider jurisdiction. We have also observed how the Arthaśāstra contemplates a class of inspectors as checking the lists of the *gopas* for selected villages to which they are deputed by the *samāhartā*. To

¹ VII, 62.

² VII, 80.

³ I, 328.

⁴ II, 5. 72.

⁵ Above, pp. 49-50.

these we have now to add another class of officers called the *pradeṣṭṛs* ('Polizei- oder Strafrichter'), who are expected to look after the fulfilment of duties and the forcible collection of the *bali*¹ from the stations of the *gopa* and the *sthānika*. As the *pradeṣṭṛs* in the *Arthaśāstra* are essentially concerned with the functions of police and criminal justice, it would seem that the help of the executive was sought for the collection of the land-revenue, when it was withheld by the cultivators. It is possible that the collection of the revenue was normally left in the hands of the revenue officers properly so called. In connection with the present point it may be noticed that the *gopa* and the *sthānika* share with the *pradeṣṭṛ* in the exercise of police functions. With the *gopas* and the *sthānikas*, we are told in one place, the *pradeṣṭṛ* is to follow the track of thieves outside the capital city, while the *nāgarika* ('City Superintendent') is to do the same within the limits of the capital. On the other hand the *Arthaśāstra* is strangely silent about the revenue functions of the village headman, who is mentioned several times² under the titles of *grāmika*, *grāmakūṭa*, *grāmasvāmin* and *grāmamukhya*.

The territorial divisions in the *Arthaśāstra*, mentioned in connection with the *gopas* and the *sthānikas*, are independent of the administrative divisions of the kingdom into groups of 800, 400, 200 and 10 villages, which are specified elsewhere.³ On the other hand the *Smṛtis* are acquainted with only one

¹ *Kāryakaraṇam* in the original, explained as above by M. According to Gaṇ. it means the work of extirpating the thorns, as explained in Kauṭ. IV, 1. *Balipragrahaṃ* according to Bhaṭṭ. means either the forcible collection of the revenue accruing to and withheld from the king, or else subjugation of the chiefs of the villages and the kingdom. The first alternative is adopted by Stein (pp. 197-198 n) and M. (p. 228). We have taken the phrase in the sense of forcible collection of the specific tax called the *bali*.

² IV, 6; III, 10; IV, 4; Ibid 13.

³ II, 1.

series of territorial divisions designed for the purpose of general administration. The scheme, as we learn from parallel passages in Manu,¹ and the Mahābhārata,² comprises groups of 100, 20, 10 and 1 villages which are under a suitable head. Here it will be observed the basis of the whole structure is the village headman who is almost completely ignored in the Arthasāstra. Another difference between the system of the Smṛtis and the Arthasāstra lies, as we shall presently see, in the fact that while the official land-holding which is mentioned in connection with these officers is apparently enjoyed in full ownership in the former case, it amounts to a mere usufruct in the latter.³

¹ VII, 115-117.

² XII, 87, 3-5.

³ Besides the above a group of five village officials is mentioned by the commentator Nilakaṇṭha (on Mahā., II, 5. 18). This consists of the *praśāstā*, the *samāhartā*, the *sannidhātā*, the clerk, and the witness. There seems to be no authority for this statement. The first three officials at any rate are well-known to the Arthasāstra as high officers of the central administration.

APPENDIX

THE BRANCHES OF STATE EXPENDITURE.

The most systematic classification of the heads of State expenditure that is found in the Hindu technical literature on polity occurs in a chapter of the Arthaśāstra relating to the collection of revenue by the *samāhartā*.¹ There we are introduced to a 'body of expenditure,' 'Ausgabenkörper' (*vyaya-śarīram*) consisting of eighteen specified items as follows :

- (1) What is required for worship of the gods and the king's ancestors, as well as for gifts,
- (2) What is given as present on occasions of auspicious prayers by the priests,
- (3) The royal seraglio,
- (4) The royal kitchen.
- (5) Expenses for embassage, ^{grade, 4,000} messengers, 'Gesandten-aufwand,' ^{nts (adhyak}
- (6) The royal store-house,
- (7) The armoury,
- (8) The warehouse for merchandise,
- (9) The store-house for forest produce (*kupyagrha*),
- (10) The State workshops, 'Verarbeitungswerkstätten,'
- (11) Forced labour (*vishti*),
- (12, 13, 14 and 15) Maintenance of infantry, cavalry, chariots and elephants,
- (16) The State herds,
- (17) Preserves for wild and domestic animals, birds and snakes,
- (18) Storing places for wood and hay,

The above classification, it will be noticed, has still less scientific value than the parallel classification of the constituent

elements of the 'body of income,' which occurs in the same chapter. In fact it gives us a list (which is far from being exhaustive) of the branches of State expenditure, without the least pretence to their arrangement according to cognate types. Among its points of special interest may be mentioned (a) the relatively large number of items comprising what may be called the personal expenditure of the king, which shows how largely the State was identified with the king, and (b) the inclusion of forced labour in the list of items of expenditure, and not, as might be expected, among those of income. For the rest, it may be remarked that the items mentioned in the foregoing list are not in general matched by those found in the Smṛtis.

Not only does the Arthaśāstra give us the most systematic classification of the heads of State expenditure, but it presents the completest account of one of its most important branches, which relates to the upkeep of the royal establishment. This forms the subject of a ^{ātā} chapter bearing the title of 'maintenance of the people ^{is statement} in the king's service.'¹ The king, we are first told, should see ^{Arthaśāstra} to the performance of services out of one-fourth of the revenue (*samudayapāda*) according to the capacity of his kingdom, or else by engaging the agents on terms sufficient to attract them. In other words one-fourth of the revenue is in general to be spent upon the maintenance of the king's establishment. This is immediately followed by a list of various persons on the royal establishment arranged according to grades of salaries as follows :—

1st grade, 48,000 (paṇas).

Sacrificial priest, spiritual preceptor, minister (*mantrin*),
chaplain (*purohita*), commander-in-chief (*senāpati*),
Crown Prince, Queen-Mother, and Queen-Consort.

2nd grade, 24,000 (*paṇas*).

Door-keeper (*dauvārika*), keeper of the seraglio, *praśāstā* ('Leiter,' 'Chef der Pioniertruppen'), *samāhartā*, and *sannidhātā*.

3rd grade, 12,000 (*paṇas*).

Royal prince, the prince's nurse, the captain (*nāyaka*¹), the city judge,² the officer-in-charge of the State workshops (*kārmāntika*), the Council of ministers, the Superintendent of the country-part (*rāṣṭrapāla*) and the boundary-officer.

4th grade, 8,000 (*paṇas*).

The heads of corporations (*śreṇīmukhya*), the officers in charge of elephants, cavalry and chariots, and the *pradeṣṭr* ('Strafrichter').

5th grade, 4,000 (*paṇas*).

The superintendents (*adhyakṣas*) of infantry, cavalry, chariots and elephants, as well as the guardians of forests of useful products and of elephant-forests.

6th grade, 2,000 (*paṇas*).

The 'Wagenmann' (*rathika*), the elephant-trainer, the physician, the trainer of horses, the carpenter and the breeder of animals.

¹ Gaṇ. takes it in the sense of infantry-commander, but this is contradicted by the mention of *padika*, *senāpati* and *nāyaka* as different ranks in the army in Kauṭ., X, 6.

² *Pauravyāvahārika* in the original. Sh. takes it in the sense of the officer in charge of the town and the Superintendent of Law or Commerce. This is negated by the fact that the corresponding term occurs in Aśoka's inscriptions as the title of a single official.

7th grade, 1,000 (*paṇas*).

The fortune-teller (*kārttāntika*), the interpreter of omens (*naimittika*), the astrologer (*mauhūrttika*), the reciter of the *purāṇas*, bards and minstrels, the *purohita*'s assistants, and all Superintendents; also the king's charioteers and spies of five specified classes.

Intermediate grade between 1,000 and 500 (*paṇas*).

Officials 'who are Aryans,' teachers, learned men, and other specified classes.

8th grade, 500 (*paṇas*).

Skilled infantry and the group of accountants, clerks and so forth; also village servants (*grāmahṛtaka*), three specified classes of spies, and mendicant women.

The list descends to grades of 250, 120, 60, 10 and even less *paṇas*, but it is unnecessary to mention them here. What is of more interest is that the *Arthaśāstra* further requires the Superintendents in charge of groups of 100 and 1,000 officials to provide for payment of food and wages to them. In the same context we are told that the provision of food should be made on the scale of one *ādḥaka* (a measure of capacity) corresponding to the money payment of sixty *paṇas*. With regard to those who die in the king's service, it is further laid down that their wives and children should receive food and wages, while the infants, the aged and the diseased among them should receive the king's favour, and gifts and honours should be bestowed upon them on occasions of death, disease and child-birth in the family.

In connection with the items of expenditure mentioned above a few important points may be noticed. First, we have to mention the enormous importance of the rôle played by the priests of the royal establishment. The sacrificial priest, the

spiritual preceptor and the king's domestic chaplain, are included in the first grade of officials, occupying the same status as the Crown Prince, the Queen-Mother and the Queen-Consort. The Arthaśāstra, moreover, contemplates, as we have seen elsewhere, the grant of revenue-free lands to the same persons at the time of the colonisation of tracts by the king. Again, we may observe that the Superintendents, the accountants and so forth together with the physicians and the trainers of elephants and horses, who are here included in the sixth, seventh and eighth grades, also receive grants of lands without the right of sale or mortgage from the king in the same circumstances. This mixed method of remuneration in cash and by means of land-grants, as we have elsewhere pointed out, was likewise characteristic of the *jaigir* system of the Mughal Emperors.

Besides describing the expenses of the royal establishment in the chapter above mentioned, the Arthaśāstra elsewhere refers to other items of State expenditure. A few of these may be noticed below :—

1. *Gifts to Brāhmaṇas*.—In connection with the arrangements for settling new and old territories¹ we are told that the king is to make grants of revenue-free lands accompanied with rich gifts to the sacrificial priest, the spiritual preceptor, the domestic chaplain (*purohita*) and the learned Brāhmaṇas. He is further required to grant forests suited for Veda study and for the performance of Soma sacrifices to the Brāhmaṇas out of lands unfit for cultivation. Out of the same source he is to provide hermitages amounting to a *goruta*² measure for the ascetics.

¹ Kauṭ., II, 1-2.

² *Goruta*, 'as far as the bellowing of a cow can be heard' is the name of a land-measure in Kauṭ., II, 20. Cf. the expln. of the unknown commr. on Nītivākyaṃṛtam, XIX, 24: *gorutapramāṇā gorutam gośavdo yāvanmātrāyām bhūmau śrūyate tāvanmātrā*.

2. *Relief of the sick, the aged and the helpless.*—According to Kauṭilya¹ the king is to maintain the infants, the aged, the diseased, the distressed and the helpless; he is also to support the women who have not yet given birth to children, and to the children that are born of them, evidently when they are in a helpless condition.

3. *Famine relief.*—While describing² the measures to be taken for counteracting providential calamities, Kauṭilya mentions that during famines the king should give away seeds and provisions, or start relief works on forts (or fortified cities) and irrigation works, or distribute food among the people.

To the elaborate list of State functionaries arranged according to their grades of salaries that is above described, the Smṛtis offer no parallel. But they show from time to time a few analogies. Manu, *e. g.*, gives us³ an interesting scale of remuneration of the king's servants as follows :—

The lowest class.....one *paṇa* a day, one *drona* measure of grain every month, and one clothing every six months.

The highest class.....six *paṇas* a day, 6 *dronas* a month, and six cloths every six months.

With this may be compared the scale of sixty *paṇas* for one *ādhaka* measure in the Arthaśāstra.⁴ A much more interesting example is furnished by the scale of remuneration of the officers in charge of local administration, that is mentioned in parallel passages of Manu and the Mahābhārata.⁵ This may be shown in tabular form as follows :—

1. Lord of ten villages.....one *kula* of land, *i. e.*, as much land as can be cultivated by twelve oxen.

¹ II, 1.

² IV, 3.

³ VII, 125-126.

⁴ V, 3.

⁵ Manu, VII, 118-119 ; Mahā., XII, 68, 6-8. The above scale is mentioned by Manu, that of the Mahābhārata shows minor differences.

2. Lord of twenty villages.....five *kulas* of land.
3. Lord of one hundred villages.....one village.
4. Lord of one thousand villages.....one town.

Not only do the Smṛtis attempt to fix up the rates of remuneration of certain classes of State officers, they also refer in general terms to other branches of expenditure as well.¹ These may be conveniently arranged as follows :—

1. *Gifts to Brāhmaṇas.*—In Gaut.² the learned Brāhmaṇa (*śrotriya*) heads the list of persons who are to be maintained by the king. Āpast.³ recommends the king to make gifts of fields and money to the Brāhmaṇas without detriment to his own men. According to Viṣṇu⁴ the king should make gifts of land and money of all kinds to the Brāhmaṇas. Both Manu⁵ and Yāj.⁶ declare that money given by the king to the Brāhmaṇas is an imperishable treasure. A sort of climax is reached in the section on Polity in the Agni Purāṇa,⁷ where we are told that the king is constantly to deposit half of his revenue into his treasury, and bestow the other half upon the Brāhmaṇas.

2. *Relief of the poor, the sick and the destitute.*—In Gaut.'s list of persons who are to be maintained by the king are included, besides the learned Brāhmaṇas already mentioned, the persons, although not Brāhmaṇas, who are incapable of earning their livelihood, those who are immune from taxes and temporary (Vedic) students. To the same effect runs a passage in the Mahābhārata⁸ inculcating that

¹ The Epic idea of the legitimate heads of State expenditure is summed up in a passage of the Rāmāyaṇa (II, 100.55), where the question is asked whether the wealth of the State is spent upon the worship of gods and ancestors, upon the Brāhmaṇas and the guests, and upon the troops and allies.

² X, 9.

³ II, 10. 26. 1.

⁴ III, 81, 84.

⁵ VII, 82.

⁶ I, 315.

⁷ CCXXIII, 14.

⁸ Mahā., II, 5, 124.

the king should support like a father the blind, the dumb, the lame, the defective in limb as well as those who have renounced the world.¹

3. *Pensions*.—According to Vas.² the king is to maintain the wives of soldiers slain in battle. With this may be compared the much more general rule of the Arthaśāstra requiring the king to provide food and wages for the wives and children of those dying in his service.

4. *Salaries of soldiers*.—A passage common to the Mahābhārata and the Rāmāyaṇa,³ and no doubt derived by both from a common source, impresses upon the king the necessity of giving proper food and wages to the troops at the due time, for if the time for payment is passed, those who live upon food and wages become greatly angered with their master, and this is declared to be a great evil. With this may be compared the rule in the Arthaśāstra relating to the provision of food and wages for the troops.

Turning to the later works on Polity, we may mention that the Nītivākyaṃṛtam of the Jaina Somadeva mentions⁴ that the king should bestow lands amounting to a *goruta* measure upon the gods and the Brāhmaṇas. This clause, unless it is a faulty imitation of the original passage in the Arthaśāstra, must have tended to limit the religious endowments to a greater extent than before. Another passage of the Nītivākyaṃṛtam⁵ enjoins by implication that the king should accumulate grain as a provision against famine. We may compare with this a text of Nār. quoted by the commentator on the above to the effect that the king should distribute grain among his subjects when a famine breaks out.

¹ Āpast. (II, 10. 26.22) requires the king to maintain women and girls who have been defiled.

² XIX, 20.

³ Mahā., II, 5. 48-49; Rām., II, 100. 32-33.

⁴ XIX, 24.

⁵ VIII, 6.

Of much greater interest than the above is the account of the well-known mediaeval work on Polity called the *Sukraniti*. It gives us, in the first place, two distinct lists of what may be called the budget of State expenditure. The first¹ which, we are told, is to apply to a feudatory chief and so forth, and not to those of lesser rank, is as follows :—

1.	Army	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{2}$ of the revenue
2.	Gifts	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{2}$ ditto.
3.	Principal officers (<i>prakṛtis</i> ²)	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{2}$ ditto.
4.	Heads of Departments (<i>adhikārins</i>)	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{2}$ ditto.
5.	King's personal expenditure	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{2}$ ditto.
6.	Balance to be deposited in treasury	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{2}$ ditto.

The second form of the State budget³ is fixed for the month, and is declared to apply to kings with an annual income of 100,000 (gold or silver) coins (*karṣas*). It comprises the following items :—

1.	Necessaries, gifts, and king's personal expenses	...	...	...	1,500 <i>karṣas</i> .
2.	Clerks	...	...	...	100 „
3.	Ministers	...	...	...	300 „
4.	The royal family	...	...	...	300 „
5.	Gifts to learned men	...	...	...	200 „
6.	Cavalry, horses and infantry	...	...	...	400 „
7.	Elephants, camels, bullocks and military engines (<i>nālas</i>)	...	...	...	400 „
8.	Balance to be deposited in treasury	...	...	...	1,500 „

¹ I, 316-317.

² A list of ten *prakṛtis* of the king consisting of the chaplain, the minister, the judge and so forth occurs in *Sukra* (II, 69-70).

³ IV, 7, 25-27.

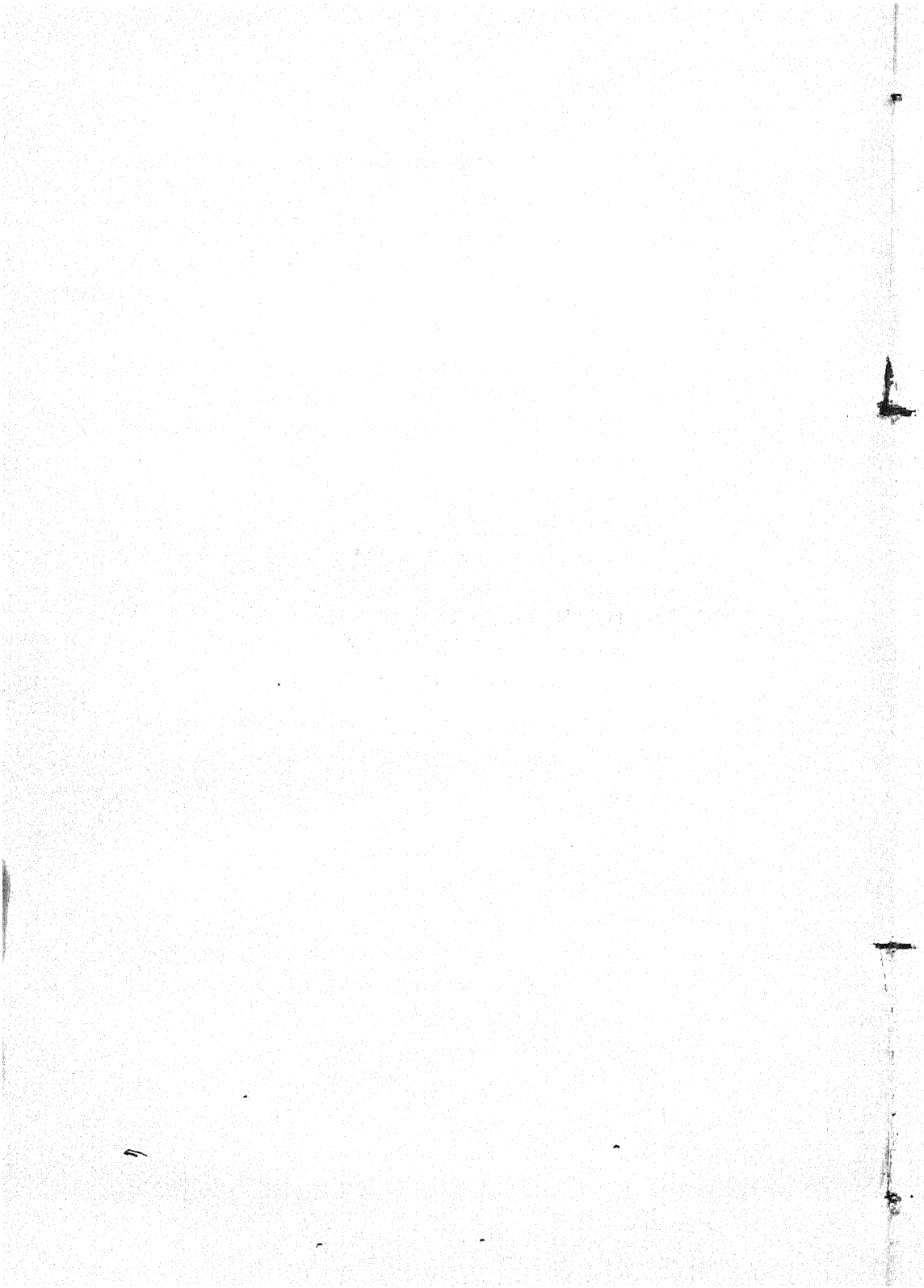
In the above Nos. 6 and 7 of the latter list evidently correspond to No. 1 of the former, while the 2nd and 5th items of the former group are comprised in the first item of the second. This comparison shows that the amount of expenditure in the latter case, under the heads of army as well as gifts and the king's personal expenses, is very nearly the same as that in the former, *viz.*, $\frac{1}{2}$ and $\frac{1}{3}$ respectively. Further, it will be observed that the proportion of the saving in the latter case, *viz.*, $\frac{1500}{3300}$ nearly correspond to the figure for the former case, *viz.*, $\frac{1}{3}$. On the other hand the sum spent in the first list upon the official establishment, *viz.*, $\frac{1}{3}$ is very much higher than the corresponding sum in the second; *viz.*, $\frac{4}{33}$.

Next to its statement of the budgets of annual expenditure which stands unique in the Hindu literature, may be mentioned a text of the Śukraniti¹ regarding the legitimate heads of State expenses. There we are told that the accumulation of revenue which is made for the maintenance of troops and the subjects, and for the performance of sacrifice, confers happiness upon the king both here and hereafter, while its collection for other purposes causes suffering to him : what is accumulated only for wife and children and for personal enjoyment leads to hell, and does not produce happiness hereafter.

¹ IV, 2, 3-4.

PART III

A HISTORICAL ACCOUNT OF THE REVENUE
SYSTEM IN NORTHERN INDIA,
C. 300 B.C.—1200 A.C.



CHAPTER I


INTRODUCTORY—THE MAURYA PERIOD.

In the foregoing section we have attempted to investigate the ancient Indian revenue system in the light of notices in the literature of Law and Polity which, however much they represent a general tradition of financial administration, undoubtedly have their basis in the historical conditions of the past. It will now be our endeavour to examine another set of facts which are drawn from the actual history of States and dynasties, and attempt with their help to trace the historical development of the Indian revenue system in ancient times.

While it is undoubtedly desirable to include the Northern Indian data as well as those of the Deccan and Southern India in a comprehensive survey of the ancient revenue systems, it has been found necessary in the present work to confine our attention to the northern evidence alone for the sake of practical convenience. The records of the South are collectively very large in extent, far exceeding those of the North. But this very amplitude of material forbids their inclusion in a general historical survey of Indian revenues at least for the present. Again, the revenue systems of the South, while resembling those of Northern India in their broad outline, present many distinctive features in the details, which alone would justify their independent treatment. Lastly, many of the technical terms used in the Kanarese and the Tamil tracts of the South are obviously derived from the local vernaculars, so that a knowledge of the South-Indian languages is indispensable for their proper elucidation.

The difficulties of our task even with this limitation are numerous and important. The evidence, such as it is, consists mainly of the formulae of the land-grants of kings specifying the immunities bestowed, and the privileges conferred, upon the grantees. This is supplemented by occasional notices of foreign travellers and references to historical events in the general literature. Now not only is the record of the land-grants fragmentary and imperfect in the extreme, as it necessarily deals with the revenues and other charges imposed upon the agricultural land alone, and specifies only the chief items as illustrative examples, but the terms mentioned in these records are often obscure and difficult to interpret. Moreover, the formal nature of the documents is a possible source of difficulty, since the points mentioned therein may well refer not to actual conditions of administration, but to a mere legal tradition. Nor, again, do the notices of the foreign travellers help to simplify the problem, for not only are they expressed in too general terms to be of much value for a precise historical investigation, but they are often vitiated by obscurities and ambiguities of expression.

One conspicuous example of the dearth of material that we have just mentioned is the complete silence of our sources regarding the statistics of ancient Indian revenue systems. In this respect the ancient period of Indian history presents a mournful contrast as compared with the mediaeval period which is illumined with statistical returns of revenue furnished by the official and semi-official sources, as well as the observations of contemporary European travellers. In these circumstances it is impossible to attempt for the early period a detailed development of the revenue system of any region, such as has been done with eminent success with regard to the Mughal Empire.



Beginning our historical survey of the revenue systems of Northern India with the time of the Maurya Emperors (*circa* 323-185 B.C.), we have to observe that by far the most important evidence bearing upon this period is contained in the notices, unfortunately preserved in second-hand sources, of Megasthenes, the famous ambassador of Seleucus Nikator at the court of his great rival Chandragupta Maurya (*c.* 323-298 B.C.). Some supplementary help is derived from the references in the inscriptions of Chandragupta's grandson Aśoka (*c.* 272-232 B.C.), and from a historical allusion in the *Mahābhāṣya* of the grammarian Patañjali (*c.* 150 B.C.).

We may conveniently arrange the data derived from the authorities above mentioned, under the following general heads :—

I

Land Revenue.

Describing the second of his seven Indian castes (*viz.*, the caste of husbandmen), Megasthenes gives the following account, which in the three distinct versions stands as follows, according to the recent English rendering of F. J. Monahan :—

Diodorus.	Strabo.	Arrian.
<p>"The second caste consists of the husbandmen who appear to be far more numerous than the others..... They pay a land-tribute to the king, because all India is the property of the crown, and no private person is permitted to own land. Besides the land-tribute,¹ they pay into the royal treasury a fourth part of the produce of the soil."</p>	<p>"The second caste consists of the husbandmen who form the bulk of the population..... The whole of the land is the property of the king and the husbandmen till it on condition of receiving one-fourth of the produce."</p>	<p>"After them (<i>viz.</i>, the first caste of Sophists) the second caste consists of the tillers of the soil, who form the most numerous class of the population... They cultivate the soil and pay tribute to the king and the independent cities....."</p>

¹ *Early History of Bengal*, pp. 142, 144, 149.

The tendency of modern interpreters of Megasthenes till very recent times has been completely to discredit the testimony of the above account, partly on the ground of the supposed inconsistency of its different versions, and partly because of its alleged variation with the Indian evidence.¹ But a completely new turn has been given to this question by the illuminating researches of Bernhard Breloer, who has made a remarkable attempt² to rehabilitate the evidence of the Greek ambassador. State ownership of land, he points out, is an axiom of ancient Indian Public Law. Diodorus makes not only the positive statement about the king's ownership of land, but he also mentions its negative consequence, *viz.*, that the ownership of immovable property did not belong to any private individual. Strabo contents himself with the assertion that the land belonged to the king. Arrian, whose account is stated in very general terms, mentions that the taxes were paid directly to the State. This implies (according to Breloer) that the State ownership of land was mentioned in the original passage of Megasthenes. The accounts of Diodorus and Strabo agree on the point that a certain portion of the corps ($\frac{1}{4}$ according to the latter, $\frac{3}{4}$ according to the former) had to be paid into the king's magazine. The term *misthosis* which constitutes the difficulty in the version of Diodorus signifies not only 'rent,' but also 'stipulation' or 'agreement' ('Vertrag') as such. Hence the passage of Diodorus '*choris de tes misthoseos tetarten eis to basilikon telousi*'³ means that when the cultivators worked in full independence (*i. e.*, with their own

¹ Cf. Baden-Powell, *Indian Village Community*, p. 208; Hopkins, *India,—Old and New*, p. 221; Jolly, *Aufsätze zur Kultur- und Sprachgeschichte, vornemlich des Orients*, pp. 27-29; Stein, *Megasthenes und Kaṭilya*, pp. 93-98, 127-128.

² *Kaṭāliya-Studien I, Das Grundeigentum in Indien*. (Bonn, 1927), p. 52 ff.

³ Tr. above as 'besides the land-tribute they pay into the royal treasury a fourth part of the produce of the soil.'

cattle and implements) and no other arrangement was made, they had to pay at least $\frac{1}{4}$ th.

The searching analysis of Breloer presents for the first time an intelligible interpretation of the much discussed text of Megasthenes. In particular, it involves the happy solution of a problem that has been a puzzle so long, *viz.*, the alleged statement of Diodorus about the cultivators' payment of $\frac{1}{4}$ of the produce 'besides the rent.' In the light of the above explanation Megasthenes's text would seem to furnish contemporary evidence regarding the following features of the Maurya land-revenue system :

1. The whole land belonged to the king,
2. According to one version, the rent paid by the cultivators amounted to $\frac{1}{4}$ th of the produce in the absence of special arrangements,
3. According to another version, the cultivators received from the king $\frac{1}{4}$ th of the produce as wages.

In estimating the value of the above evidence for a true picture of land-revenue conditions in the first part of the 3rd century B. C., it is proper to compare it with the testimony of the traditional system and other historical evidence. First, then, as regards the State ownership of land, the Arthasāstra, as we have seen, apparently refers to some lands as belonging to the cultivating possession of the king. But it contemplates other lands as being in occupation of revenue-paying tenants ('tax-payers'). What is more important, this latter class of lands is expressly declared to be transferable. The transfer of land by gift, though not by sale, is also permitted in the Dharmasūtras.¹ On the other hand, the Arthasāstra recognises the absolute right of the king to dispose of the tracts in course of colonisation. Moreover, the maxims regarding the king's ownership of land, which are found in the later Smṛtis, had a precursor in the famous dictum of

¹ For references see the author's forthcoming work *Ancient Indian Law Revenue Systems*.

Gautama Dharmasūtra,¹ viz., that the king is master of all with the exception of the Brāhmaṇas. It might also be that the consolidation of Northern India under the imperial sway of the Mauryas would at least furnish a congenial soil for the growth of such maxims. On the whole, we are inclined to think that the comprehensive statement of Megasthenes was a rash generalisation from certain tendencies of development of the land-tenures that had already begun to manifest themselves. As regards the class of cultivators receiving $\frac{1}{4}$ th of the produce as their wages, they evidently correspond to the 'workers by their own labour' (*svavīryopajivins*) receiving $\frac{1}{4}$ th or $\frac{1}{8}$ th of the produce, who are mentioned by Kauṭilya as cultivating the king's farms in certain circumstances. In a similar way the husbandmen paying a rent of $\frac{1}{4}$ th of the produce may be fitly compared with the cultivators (*karṣakas*), who according to Kauṭilya had to pay the king a benevolence (*praṇaya*) of $\frac{1}{4}$ th of the grain-produce in emergencies. This comparison, evidently, does not indicate a 'complete agreement' between Megasthenes and Kauṭilya: it shows, on the other hand, an appreciable enhancement of the rate of land-revenue in the former case as compared with the latter.² Although it is improbable that other classes of cultivators like the *ardhasītikas* of Kauṭilya were absolutely unknown at this period, Megasthenes's statement may be taken to show that the tenants receiving $\frac{1}{4}$ th of the produce as their remuneration were principally employed for cultivation of the king's farms. In a similar way the testimony of the Greek ambassador would seem to show that the normal rate of land-revenue in his time was equivalent to the rate prescribed by the theorists for emergencies of the State. Independent evidence of the relatively high rate of the Maurya land-revenue is furnished by the Rummindei pillar inscription of Aśoka, which records the Emperor's order that the village of Lumbini, because of its

¹ XI, 1.

² Contrast Breloer, p. 91.

being the birth-place of Buddha, has been made liable to $\frac{1}{8}$ of the *bhāga* and exempted from *bali*. As this concession was made by the Emperor for the holiest place of his faith, it follows that not only was complete remission of the land-revenue not thought of in the Maurya period, but that its principal branch was fixed sufficiently high to make its reduction to the ratio of $\frac{1}{8}$ amount to a very great favour.¹

Some further light is thrown upon the sources of revenue from land and the like by another fragmentary notice from the account of Megasthenes. Describing the class of officers called *agoranomi*² (generally but incorrectly translated as 'officers in charge of markets'), Megasthenes, according to the version of Strabo,³ wrote as follows :—

“Some superintend the rivers, measure the land, as is done in Egypt, and inspect the sluices, by which water is let out from the main channels into their branches... They collect the taxes and superintend the occupations connected with land, such as those of the wood-cutters, the carpenters, the blacksmiths and the miners.”

With reference to the above extract the following points may be mentioned :—

1. Stein has already compared⁴ ‘the officials who superintend the rivers’ of Megasthenes with the *nadīpāla*

¹ This interpretation of the Aśokan text was first suggested by the present writer in his paper ‘*Megasthenes's text regarding the land-revenue system of the Mauryas—a new interpretation*’ (Proc. of the All-India Oriental Conference, Lahore, 1930).

² The functions of the *agronomi*, as described by Megasthenes, resemble those of the Roman Aediles. For *agronomoi* Stein (*Megasthenes und Kautilya*, p. 234) suggests the emendation *agoranomoi*, this being from title of an official who exercised functions in the country-parts similar to those of the *astynomoi* in the towns.

³ Monahan, *Early History*, p. 157.

⁴ *Op. cit.* p. 235.

(the guardian or superintendent of rivers) of Kautilya. In view of this comparison it may be surmised that the branch of State income called *nadīpāla* in Kautilya's classified list of constituents of the revenue was also known to the Maurya Empire. It may also be suspected that ferry dues and customs duties were included among the heads of the Maurya revenues, although Megasthenes in his palpably meagre account is wholly silent about them.

2. In so far as the phrase 'as is done in Egypt' is concerned, its purport is explained in another extract from Strabo's work, which runs as follows :—

"This exact and minute subdivision is necessitated by the constant disturbance of boundaries caused by the Nile in its inundations in which it adds (to some) and takes away (from others), alters shapes and destroys the other signs by which the property of one can be distinguished from that of another, so that it (the land) has to be re-measured repeatedly."¹

At the present time frequent surveys of the lands bordering on the banks of the great rivers in Bengal have to be made for revenue purposes and settlement of boundary disputes. It would thus seem that the officers of the Maurya Empire were concerned with the supervision of the alluvial deposits for revenue purposes. The Arthaśāstra, as we have seen, includes the term *rajju*, literally meaning 'rope,' in its list of sources of revenue from the country-parts.

3. With the inspection of canals by the *agronomi* Stein compares² the rule of the Arthaśāstra regarding the collection of the water-rate (*udakabhāga*) by the Superintendent of agriculture, and the construction of tanks, reservoirs, etc., by the Superintendent of pastures. From this it would follow that the water-rates from irrigated land were included in the

¹ XI,

Monahan, p. 162.

² *Op. cit.* p. 237.

Maurya sources of public revenue. It may be added that one of the functions of the *agronomi*, according to Megasthenes, was the collection of taxes.

Mention may be made in the next place of two classes of officers called *rājukas* and *prādeśikas* in the Aśokan inscriptions.¹ *Rājukas* were set by the Emperor over hundreds of thousands of people, and made self-dependent as regards judicial investigation and punishment. Elsewhere they are mentioned along with the *yutas* and the *prādeśikas* and required to go on circuit every fifth year for instruction of the subjects in the Law of Piety as well as for other business. The *rājukas* evidently were judicial officers of high standing, probably corresponding to the *agronomi* of Megasthenes, who had the power of rewarding and punishing those who deserved the same. Since Bühler identified the *rājukas* with the *rajjuka* or the *rajjugāhaka amachcha* of the Jātaka story it has been usual to attribute fiscal functions as well to these officers. If this interpretation could be accepted, it would point to an organised system of cadastral survey of the type that is hinted at in the Arthaśāstra. The *prādeśikas* who evidently occupied a lower rank than the *rājukas* have been identified by F. W. Thomas² with the *pradeṣṭṛs* of Kauṭilya, one of whose functions, as we have seen, was to collect the *bali* tax by force. If this identification can be established, it will merely testify to the prevalence in the Maurya Empire of a tax of which we have independent proof in the Rummindei pillar inscription above mentioned.³

¹ Rock Edict IV ; Pillar Edict II.

² JRAS, 1915.

³ When Stein (p. 242) makes the divergence of Megasthenes from Kauṭilya rest upon the fact that the latter knows no other officer than the *samāhartā* to be responsible for the collection of the revenue, he ignores the function of the *pradeṣṭṛs* relating to the collection of *bali*.

II

Tax upon herdsmen and hunters.

The herdsmen and hunters form the third caste in Megasthenes's enumeration of the seven Indian castes. His account, as usual, has been handed down to us in three different versions, which may be given in Monahan's translation¹ as follows:—

Diodorus.

"The third caste consists of the neat-herds and shepherds and in general of all herdsmen who neither settle in towns nor in villages, but live in tents. By hunting and trapping they clear the country of various birds and wild beasts....."

Strabo.

"The third caste consists of herdsmen and hunters who alone are allowed to hunt and to keep cattle and to sell draught animals and let them out to hire. In return for clearing the land of wild beasts and fowls who devour the seeds sown in the fields, they receive an allowance of grain from the king."

Arrian.

"The third caste among the Indians consist of the herdsmen, both shepherds and neat-herds, and they neither live in cities nor in villages, but they are nomadic, and live on the hills. They, too, are subject to tribute, and this they pay in cattle."

On comparing the above versions we notice that while according to Strabo the herdsmen and hunters receive an allowance of grain from the king, they are said by Arrian to pay a tribute in cattle, while Diodorus is altogether silent on this point. Leaving the last out of account, the only way of reconciling these divergences of two writers purporting to draw their information from the same source is to suppose that both the accounts were contained in the original description, but were separately handed down by its transmitters. Both points, indeed, have their counterpart in the Arthasāstra. In so far as payment of allowances to the herdsmen is concerned, the Arthasāstra mentions in one place² that various specified

¹ *Early History*, pp. 142, 144, 149.

² II, 29.

classes of herdsmen and the like being placed in charge of packs of 100 cows should receive their remuneration in cash from the Superintendent of cattle. Again, in connection with the Superintendent of agriculture¹ we are told that the cow-herdsmen and the like should receive a remuneration of $\frac{1}{2}$ *pana* per month, together with provisions according to the work performed. These rules evidently refer to the herdsmen employed on the State establishments of cattle and on the State farms. As regards payment of the tax in cattle, the Arthaśāstra² refers to a contribution in cattle which is entered by the *samāhartā* in his great revenue-roll of the kingdom. Moreover, the Arthaśāstra contemplates, as we have seen,³ the breeders of animals as paying benevolences at various specified rates during the king's emergencies. Here we are evidently concerned with the contributions of private herdsmen to the State exchequer. To summarise the above discussion, we may mention the sources of revenue of the Maurayas under the present head as consisting of the following:—

- (i) Income from State establishments of herds of cattle.
- (ii) Tax in cattle of the kind referred to in the Arthaśāstra. Although the Arthaśāstra is silent on this point, the Smṛtis, as we have seen, fix the rate of this particular tax at $\frac{1}{80}$.

III

Royal dues from artisans, craftsmen, traders and labourers.

The artisans and traders, who form the fourth of Megasthenes's seven Indian castes, are thus described in the three parallel versions :⁴

¹ II, 24.

² II, 35.

³ Above, p. 129.

⁴ *Early History of Bengal*, pp. 143, 144, 149.

Diodorus.

"The fourth caste consists of the artisans. Of these some are armourers while others make the implements which the husbandmen and others find useful in their different callings. This class is not only exempted from paying taxes but even receives maintenance from the royal exchequer."

Strabo.

"The fourth class, after herdsmen and hunters, consists of those who work as traders, of those who vend wares, and of those who are employed in bodily labour. Some of them pay tribute and render to the State certain prescribed services. But the armour-makers and ship-builders receive wages and their victuals from the king for whom alone they work."

Arrian.

"The fourth caste consists of handicraftsmen and retail-dealers. They have to perform gratuitously certain public services and to pay tribute from the produce of their labour. An exception, however, is made in favour of those who fabricate the weapons of war, and, not only so, but they even draw pay from the State. In this class are included ship-builders, and the sailors employed in the navigation of the rivers."

The gist of the above account, of which the last two versions are evidently more complete than the first, is the following :—

1. The workmen, the handicraftsmen, the artisans and traders, have to pay a tribute and perform some work for the king.
2. The armour-makers and the ship-builders and sailors form an exception to the general rule, as they are not only exempted from the tax, but also receive wages and maintenance from the State.

The workmen, handicraftsmen and artisans of the above description have been correctly identified by Stein¹ with the *karmakara*, *kāru* and *śilpin* of the *Arthaśāstra*, while the traders would apparently correspond to the *vaṇik* and the *vaidehaka* of the latter. Now so far as the armour-makers of Megasthenes's description are concerned, they are evidently employed on the State establishments, and they receive as such a remuneration from the royal treasury. The *Arthaśāstra*

¹ *Megasthenes und Kauṭilya*, p. 138.

similarly knows carpenters, skilled and unskilled craftsmen and the like, who receive a regular salary from the king's treasury. In particular it mentions¹ the Superintendent of the armoury, the Superintendent of spinning and weaving and the Superintendent of agriculture, as employing skilled and unskilled craftsmen in their respective departments. For the rest, the Arthaśāstra, as we have seen,² indirectly hints at the imposition of taxes upon the guild of craftsmen and artisans (*kāruṣilpigaṇa*) by including them in the list of revenue receipts under the class 'fortified city.' We have also found how the contributions from the artisans, craftsmen and other classes are mentioned in the Smṛtis as a distinct branch of the king's revenue from the time of Gautama onwards. Megasthenes's testimony, then, shows that the contributions from craftsmen, artisans, workmen and traders of the kind described in the Smṛtis and hinted at in the Arthaśāstra were already a recognised feature of the Maurya revenue system.

IV

Tolls, octroi duties and the like from the cities.

In the course of his description of the six Boards into which the city magistrates (*astynomi*) in charge of the imperial capital Pataliputra were divided, Megasthenes (according to the version of Strabo) wrote as follows :—

“The fourth class superintend trade and commerce. Its members have charge of weights and measures, and see that the products in their seasons are sold by public notice. No one is allowed to deal in more than one kind of commodity, unless he pays a double tax. The fifth class supervises manufactured articles, which

¹ Above, pp. 29, 90.

² Above, p. 94.

they sell by public notice. What is new is sold separately from what is old, and there is a fine for mixing the two together. The sixth and the last class consists of those who collect the tenth of the prices of the articles sold. Fraud in the payment of this tax is punishable with death.”¹

In the above the officers having charge of weights and measures may fitly be compared with Kautilya's Superintendent of weights and measures (*pautavādhyakṣa*) and the Market Superintendent (*saṁsthādhyakṣa*). The rule mentioned by the Greek writer regarding the payment of a double tax by the dealers in several articles may be due to his confusion of the different rates charged for different articles sold by the dealers.² However this may be, Megasthenes's description shows that taxes from traders formed a branch of the royal revenue under the Mauryas. It is probable that the daily punching fees which the Arthaśāstra contemplates as payable by the traders to the Superintendent of weights and measures³ were included in this charge. Coming to another point, the officers who supervise the manufactured articles according to Megasthenes, have been compared by Stein⁴ with the Superintendent of merchandise (*panyādhyakṣa*) and the Market Superintendent (*saṁsthādhyakṣa*) of the Arthaśāstra. This identification does not appear to be free from objection. The *saṁsthādhyakṣa* in the Arthaśāstra is specially charged with the sale of old merchandise presumably in order to prevent the sale of stolen property. With this agrees the notice of Megasthenes quoted above to the effect that old goods were to be sold separately from the new ones. On the other hand, the Superintendent of merchandise is concerned in the Arthaśāstra with the arrangements for State trading alone. Indeed the Arthaśāstra contemplates

¹ Monahan, pp. 157-158.

² Cf. Stein, p. 260.

³ See above, p. 75.

⁴ *Op. cit.* p. 258.

the sale of imported merchandise in the city at the toll-house under the supervision of the Superintendent of tolls. In any case it is reasonable to conclude that the State dues collectively mentioned in the Arthaśāstra under the title Market (*panyasaṁsthā*) formed a branch of the Maurya public revenues. Turning to the last point, the class of magistrates whom Megasthenes describes as receiving the tenth of the prices of articles sold undoubtedly corresponds to the Superintendent of tolls and his assistants in the Arthaśāstra. When Megasthenes mentions in this case a tax on sales while the Arthaśāstra refers to tolls at varying rates, the divergence may be partly due to the Greek writer's mistaking the tolls upon imported articles for a tax on sales, for as the Arthaśāstra informs us, the sale of merchandise was expected to take place at the toll-house, and presumably the toll was collected after the sale had been effected. Megasthenes's rate for this tax, *viz.* 10th, is double the rate prescribed in the Arthaśāstra for imported goods in general. Again, when the penalty for evasion of the toll is declared in the Arthaśāstra to be the confiscation of the merchandise or a fine of eight times the value of the tax, Megasthenes mentions the same offence to be punishable with death. The enhanced rate of the Maurya toll or tax upon merchandise, which is matched by the exceptional severity of the process of its collection, is in keeping with the high ratio of the branch of land-revenue as well.

In connection with his description of the Boards of city magistrates in charge of the imperial capital of Pataliputra Megasthenes further observes :—

“ The third body consists of those who enquire when and how births and deaths occur, with a view not only of levying a tax, but also in order that births and deaths among both high and low may not escape the cognizance of the government.”¹

¹ Monahan, *Early History*. p. 157.

We have elsewhere compared the function of this Board with that of the *gopas* in charge of 10, 20, or 40 families in the city, who are entrusted in the *Arthaśāstra* with the collection of statistics of the inhabitants. We have further suggested that the charge mentioned by Megasthenes in this case need not necessarily mean the poll-tax, but may refer to some kind of income-tax levied upon the citizens.

V

Miscellaneous revenue—mines and mining works, monopolies, hiring charges and presents, excise.

According to Megasthenes (as reported by Strabo¹) the rivers of India bore grains of gold from which the king drew a tax. Now the *Arthaśāstra*² undoubtedly mentions a species of gold called *jāmbūnada* which according to the commentator means 'gold derived from the Jambū river which arises from Mount Meru.' This species of gold is also referred to under the title *jambonada* or *jambunada* in the Pali *Dhammapada*³ and *Anguttara Nikāya*.⁴ But neither the *Arthaśāstra* nor any other work mentions a tax on the river-washings of gold of the kind referred to by Megasthenes. On the other hand, Megasthenes is altogether silent about the revenue derived by the king from mines and mining works, which is so well described by Kauṭilya. This silence is in keeping with the strange statement of another Greek writer⁵ to the effect that although the Indians had good mines of gold and silver, they were so inexperienced in the art of mining and smelting as to neglect their own mining resources.

As regards the royal monopolies Megasthenes is our

¹ Quoted, Stein, *Megasthenes und Kauṭilya*, p. 60. ² II, 13.

³ and ⁴ Dh. XVII, 9; A, I, 181, II, 8, 29. Cf. *Jāt.*, Vol. IV, p. 105.

⁵ Strabo, quoted, M'Crindle, *Ancient India as described in Classical Literature*, p. 38.

authority for the statement that the possession of the horse and the elephant was not permitted to any private person. Now the elephant is mentioned by Medhātithi, a writer of the 9th century,¹ as an instance of royal commodities whose export was forbidden on pain of confiscation of the property involved. But neither the Arthaśāstra nor any ancient authority hints at a royal monopoly of elephants and horses.² In view of this fact it will be extremely hazardous to accept the testimony of Megasthenes as correct.

As regards the hiring charges and the presents, Megasthenes in the course of his description of the fourth caste wrote as follows, according to Strabo's version³ :—

“ The admiral of the fleet lets out ships on hire for the transport both of passengers and merchandise.”

This is precisely paralleled by Kauṭilya's description of the Superintendent of ships who had to supervise the hiring of the State boats. Again, Strabo, referring undoubtedly to an older source, mentions the great ceremony of hair-washing of the king, when everyone tried to outdo his fellows by the magnificence of his presents. The Arthaśāstra likewise mentions⁴ the earnings from presents (*aupāyanika*) as a source of the king's revenue.

Turning to the last point, Megasthenes mentions in one place⁵ that the Indians drank no wine except during the sacrifices, and they drank it when it was prepared from rice instead of barley. The wine drunk during the sacrifices would evidently correspond to the juice of the *soma* plant, while the wine prepared from rice may be compared with the *medaka*,

¹ In his commentary on Manu, VIII, 399.

² The Arthaśāstra, indeed, indirectly admits the possession of elephants by private persons (see Stein, p. 58).

³ Monahan, p. 144.

⁴ Above, pp. 37-38.

⁵ See M'Crindle, *op. cit.*, p. 56.

one of the six kinds of liquor mentioned by Kauṭilya (II, 25), and the *paistī*, one of the three kinds of *surā* mentioned by Manu (IX, 95).¹ If Megasthenes's evidence is to be believed, no revenue could have been drawn by the Maurya Emperors from the sale of liquors. The *soma*, indeed, is in the Arthaśāstra expressly omitted from the list of articles subject to the toll (*śulka*), and provision is made for the king's grant of land for *soma* plantations. It is, however, very likely that Megasthenes wrongly interpreted the ban against the drinking of *surā* by the Brāhmaṇas into a general prohibition against drinking.²

VI

Extraordinary revenue.

A historical allusion in the Mahābhāṣya of the grammarian Patañjali who flourished immediately after the downfall of the Mauryas has preserved the memory of a desperate financial expedient resorted to by the Maurya Emperors. The Mauryas, we are told, being desirous of gold used (*i. e.*, sold) objects of worship.³ Now the exploitation of the objects of popular worship for purposes of public revenue is, as we have seen,⁴ one of the approved methods in the Arthaśāstra for replenishing the State treasury during emergencies. If nevertheless Patañjali has preserved the recollection of the above financial measure, it may reasonably be concluded that this was not the only expedient of the Mauryas, but was evidently the climax of a series of such measures. The resulting unpopularity from the adoption of such steps and the heavy rates of

¹ Cf. Stein, p. 91.

² Cf. *ibid.* pp. 91-92.

³ Patañjali on Pāṇini, V, 3. 99 :—

“*Mauryāḥ hiraṇyārthibhiḥ archyāḥ prakalpitāḥ.*”

⁴ Above, pp. 129-130.

taxation which have been referred to above may have contributed with other causes to the downfall of the Maurya Empire.

VII

Revenue administration.

In the course of the preceding survey we have endeavoured to refer to certain revenue officers of the Maurya administration and their analogues in the Arthaśāstra. But some further points may be here noticed. Describing the class of councillors and assessors (the seventh and the last of his seven Indian castes), Megasthenes makes some observations which may be given in the fullest version of Arrian¹ as follows :—

“The seventh caste consists of the councillors of State who advise the king or the magistrate of self-governed cities in the management of public affairs. In point of numbers this is a small class, but it is distinguished by superior wisdom and justice, and hence enjoys the prerogative of choosing governors, chiefs of provinces, deputy governors, superintendents of the treasury, generals of the army, admirals of the navy, controllers and commissioners who superintend agriculture.”

With this ‘caste’ may be compared the class of *amātyas* in the system of the Arthaśāstra,² from whom were selected by appropriate tests the officers connected with the work of civil and criminal justice, of the *samāhartā* and the *sannidhātā*, of superintendence of the king’s pleasure-grounds and of immediate attendance on the king as well as the high ministers. With the ‘chiefs of provinces’ and ‘deputy-governors’ it has been sought³ to identify

¹ Monahan, p. 150.

² Kauṭ., I, 10.

³ Stein, p. 208 ff.

respectively the *sthānika* and the *gopa* of the Arthaśāstra, but this identification clearly cannot be proved, although the *sthānika* and the *gopa*, as we have seen, are said to exercise police functions in addition to their fiscal duties. The officers mentioned by the Greek writer may be more properly represented by the *yutas* and the *rājukas* of the Aśokan inscriptions.¹ It will be further observed that Arrian distinguishes between two classes of revenue officers, *viz.*, the superintendents of the treasury and the controllers. These are translated in a more literal sense as 'Schatzhüter' and 'Schatzmeister' by Stein² who compares the former (though only in a general fashion) with the *samāhartā*, while he fails to discover any precise parallel of the latter in the Arthaśāstra.

Megasthenes, as we have seen, mentions, in connection with the city magistrates in charge of the imperial capital, at least four Boards that are directly or indirectly charged with the revenue administration. It has been sometimes³ supposed that this type of organisation is unknown to the Arthaśāstra, but a closer study shows that Kauṭilya contemplates the State departments as being placed temporarily under several heads, while he mentions Boards of judges like the three *dharmasthas* and the three *pradeśṭṛs*. In the present instance it is possible to connect the Boards mentioned by the Greek writer at least in two instances with similar institutions in the Arthaśāstra. The function of the Board charged with the collection of vital statistics may be compared, as we have seen, with that of the *gopas* in charge of ten, twenty, or forty families in the city. Now Kauṭilya mentions in connection with the last point⁴ that the *nāgarika*

¹ Cf. above, p. 173.

² *Ibid.*, p. 219.

³ Cf. Vincent Smith, *Early History of India*, 4th ed., pp. 148-149 ; Stein, p. 249.

⁴ II, 36.

(‘ city superintendent ’) is to superintend the whole town in the same manner as the *samāhartā* does the country-part, while the *sthānikas* are to superintend $\frac{1}{4}$ th of the city in the same manner as the *gopa* looks after the number of families. Apparently the *sthānika* was expected to prepare statistical returns for his wider jurisdiction on the basis of figures furnished by the *gopas*, while the *nāgarika* was expected to compile a revenue-roll of the city. In any case the *nāgarika* and the four *sthānikas* would be so closely associated in the task of compilation of statistics that they might well furnish the prototype of Megasthenes’s Board with the same functions. Again, in so far as the functions of the Board for the collection of tithes on sales are concerned, it may be pointed out that the Superintendent of tolls (*śulkādhyakṣa*) is assisted in the Arthaśāstra by four or five toll-collectors at the toll-house. Out of this arrangement may have grown the Board mentioned by Megasthenes.

CHAPTER II

THE 'SCYTHIAN' PERIOD.

In the period following the downfall of the Maurya Empire and preceding the rise of the Imperial Guptas, the Scythians¹ were undoubtedly the most considerable power over a large part of Northern and Western India. At Taxila and Mathurā, at Nāsik and Ujjainī powerful Scythian dynasties bearing the foreign titles of *kṣatrapa* and *mahākṣatrapa* were able to establish themselves. Above all, the imperial dynasty of the Kushans ruled an extensive dominion in Northern India stretching from the Himalayas to the Vindhya and extending its influence beyond into Western India as well.

The records of this period throwing light upon the contemporary revenue arrangements of States and dynasties are fragmentary and imperfect in the extreme. They consist entirely of the evidence of inscriptions, and are not illumined by the observations of foreign writers. We have in the first place a few official titles, such as those of the treasurer (*gañjavara*) mentioned in a Mathura stone slab inscription,² and the superintendent of store-house (*bhāṇḍāgārika*) in a Nāsik Buddhist cave inscription.³ Another inscription hailing from the Gorakhpur district of the United Provinces, the difficult and enigmatic Sohgaora copper plate inscription,⁴ records the

¹ This term is used in a broad sense so as to include the 'Yueh-Chi' as well.

² Lüders's *List of Brāhmī Inscr. from the earliest times to about A.D. 400* (Ep. Ind., Vol. X), No. 82.

³ *Ibid.*, No. 1141.

⁴ *Ibid.*, No. 937.

order of the great officers of Śrāvastī with regard to two granaries (*koṣṭhāgāra*). These hints, perhaps, enable us to conclude that the system of revenue administration described in the Arthaśāstra and apparently followed at least in broad outlines during the Maurya period, was in part perpetuated in the regions of Northern and Western India during the present epoch.

Among the inscriptions of the Śātavāhana kings of the Deccan,¹ there are some which record the donation of lands by the kings in favour of Buddhist monastic orders. The evidence of these grants, although properly belonging to the region of Western India, is of high interest for our present purpose, as they are the earliest recorded instance of the donation of lands with the usual formulæ of later times. In some of these royal grants the lands forming the subject-matter of the donations are declared to be the king's fields.² Probably such lands were royal farms in the villages, of the kind contemplated by Kauṭilya and apparently existing in the Maurya period. In other cases an entire village is granted in favour of the donee.³ This probably amounted thus early only to an assignment of the royal revenue, and not a transfer of proprietorship. Another point that may be noted in this connection is that the grants are sometimes stated to be made with immunities belonging to the lands of the Buddhist monks (*bhikkhūhalāparihāra*). With this may be compared the term used in the land grants of the Vākāṭaka kings of later times, *viz.*, 'the usual rule of enjoyment of *brahmadeya* lands.' In the Arthaśāstra, as we have seen, the grant of *brahmadeya* lands is required to be made free of taxes and fines, and with the accompaniment of excellent gifts. Among the Śātavāhana land-grants the list of immunities is given in the most

¹ The inscriptions of the Śātavāhana kings at Kārlē and Nāsik are conveniently collected together in Ep. Ind., VII, No. 7 and VIII, No. 8.

² Cf. *rājakam kheta* (Ep. Ind., VIII, No. 8.5).

³ Cf. Ep. Ind., VIII, No. 8.3.

complete examples as *apāvesa*, *anomasa*, *alonakhādaka* and *araṭhasavinayika*.¹ The first may be compared with the term *achāṭabhaṭapṛāveśy* and its variants in the later inscriptions, which refer to the exemption from entrance by irregular and regular troops. The second term was explained by Burgess² to mean immunity from interference. The next term *alonakhādaka* was explained by the same scholar to refer to the exemption from the salt-tax, while Senart understood it to mean 'not to be extracted for salt.' The former interpretation seems more probable, since the term evidently stands for an immunity granted in favour of the donee and not a right reserved to the king. It probably refers to the exemption of the donee from fines for extracting salt which was regarded as a royal monopoly.³ The last expression *araṭhasavinayika* which Senart has aptly compared with the *araṭṭhasamvinayikam* of the Hirahadagalli plates of the Pallava king Śivaskandavarman⁴ is explained by him to mean the exemption from police and magistrates of the district. But of such extensive immunities in favour of the donee there is no independent evidence. In any case the testimony of the Śātavāhana grants shows that Western India at this period was familiar with a number of burdens imposed upon the ordinary revenue-paying tenants. Such were the visitations by the State officers and the troops, fines for the extraction of salt which was a government monopoly and the like.

Along with the above land grants may be mentioned the grant made by a feudatory (*mahārāṭhi*) of the Śātavāhana kings, of a village in favour of a Buddhist congregation.⁵

¹ Ep. Ind., VIII, No. 3.

² ASWI, IV, p. 105.

³ In the land-grant of Śivaskandavarman above mentioned occurs the similar term *alonagulachchhobham*, where *kṣobha* in the sense of 'irritation' is used in connexion with salt.

⁴ Ep. Ind., I, No. 1.

⁵ Ep. Ind., VII, No. 7.14.

The concluding words of this inscription are *sakarukara sadeyameya*. Senart, who first construed this text in the above way, took the former phrase to be a 'natural equivalent' of *sodraṅga soparikara* of the later inscriptions, while he compared the latter phrase with the *sadhānyahiranya* of the later land grants. As thus explained, the former would mean (according to our interpretation of the terms concerned) 'together with the taxes on permanent as well as temporary tenants,' while the latter would mean 'with the taxes in kind and in cash imposed upon agricultural land.' Senart's interpretation of *sakarukara*, however, as he himself recognises, is wholly conjectural, although there is nothing improbable in the *udraṅga* and *uparikara* taxes going back to the Śātavāhana period.

Of the inscriptions of kings belonging to the dynasties of the Western Satraps, that of the famous Rudradāman,¹ engraved on the Girnar rock in the Kathiawar peninsula, contains some important notices in connexion with our present subject. There we are told that the treasury of this ruler overflowed with the excess of gold, silver, diamonds, beryl and jewels from the properly acquired *bali*, *bhāga* and *śulka*. We are further told that he constructed the famous dam of the Sudarśana Lake ("Lake Beautiful") out of his own treasury, without burdening his subjects with *kara*, unpaid labour (*viṣṭi*) and 'benevolences' (*pranaya*). *Bali* and *bhāga*, as we have seen, were recognised sources of revenue in the Maurya period, while *śulka* in its technical sense goes back to the time of Pāṇini.² Along with the *kara*, the unpaid labour and the benevolences, these are described as sources of revenue in the Arthaśāstra. The inscription of Rudradāman, therefore, besides showing the continuance of the ancient taxes upon land and the ancient tolls, contains a concrete illustration of the items of oppressive taxation mentioned in the Arthaśāstra.

¹ Ep. Ind., VIII, No. 6.

² See Pāṇ. V. 1.47.

CHAPTER III

THE GUPTA PERIOD

Among the earliest records of the Gupta dynasty that throw light upon its methods of revenue administration are the Gaya grant of the Emperor Samudragupta (c. 330-380 A.C.) which belongs to his ninth regnal year, and the newly discovered Nālandā grant of the same Emperor apparently belonging to his fifth year.¹ These records are very much alike in character, being concerned with the donation of one or more villages to the Brāhmaṇas. By the terms of the former and fuller donation the village is assigned with the *uparikara* tax, and the villagers are required not only to render general obedience to the donee, but also to pay him the usual dues from the village, e.g., the contribution in kind (*meya*), the tax in cash (*hiranya*) and so forth. On the other hand, the donee is required not to admit from that time the revenue-paying house-holders, artisans and so forth, from other villages. This important document, in the first place, illustrates the different classes of tenants inhabiting an ordinary revenue-

¹ The Gaya grant of Samudragupta (G. I. No. 60) which was regarded as spurious by Fleet has now been proved to be authentic by the discovery of the as yet unpublished Nālandā grant. Fleet's objections regarding the authenticity of the former grant may be met by pointing to the instances of restoration of old and lost plates by new ones, as in the case of the Nidhanpur plate of Bhāskara-varman (see below). For my knowledge of contents of the Nālandā plate I am indebted to my friend Mr. K. N. Dikshīt of the Archaeological Survey of India. In the present chapter GI. is used as an abbreviated form of Fleet, *Corpus Inscriptionum Indicarum*, Vol. III, *Inscriptions of the Early Gupta Kings and their Successors*.

paying village in the early part of the Gupta period, *viz.*, the temporary tenants paying the *uparikara* tax and the other tenants paying the familiar contributions in cash and in kind. Moreover, it shows the strict control which the State maintained at this period with regard to the pious grants of land, by making it an essential condition of the gift that revenue-paying tenants should not be admitted into the privileged village to the detriment of the king's revenue.

Next in order of chronological sequence comes the account of the illustrious Chinese pilgrim Fa Hien who visited the greater part of Northern India during the reign of Chandragupta II (c. 380-415 A.C.) between the years 399 and 414 A.C. In the course of his brief sketch of the 'Middle Kingdom' (the '*Madhyadeśa*' of the Brahminical writers, corresponding to the central provinces of the Gupta empire), he observes,¹ "Only those who cultivate the royal land have to pay a portion of the gain from it." This has been interpreted to mean that "the revenue was mainly derived from the rents of the Crown lands."² But there is not the slightest basis for this supposition. The true import of the above extract, which is paralleled by a similar statement of Huen Tsang in the seventh century, is to be sought in the conditions of land-tenure in the home-land of the pilgrims. As we shall see later on,³ there prevailed in China from about 280 to 780 A.C. a qualified system of public distribution of land, under which the whole territory of the State would naturally be regarded as belonging to the Emperor. Fa Hien's testimony, then, may be taken to mean that in his time the

¹ Legge's tr., pp. 42-43. The version of Giles (pp. 20-21) is practically identical. On the other hand the older version of Beal (*Travels of Fa-Hien and Song-Yun*, p. 54) is as follows:—"Those only who farm the royal demesnes pay a portion of the produce as rent."

² V. Smith, *Early History of India*, 4th ed., p. 314, followed by Beni Prasad, *The State in Ancient India*, p. 285.

³ See below p. 225.

land-revenue consisting of an undefined share of the produce formed almost the only source of the income of the State. Evidently the other sources were relatively so insignificant as hardly to deserve being taken into account. It may, further, be argued from Fa Hien's easy assimilation of the Indian agricultural lands to the public land of China that in Northern India at this period the State was virtually, if not legally, held to be the owner of the soil.

Other passages in Fa Hien's general description of the 'Middle kingdom' help indirectly to throw some light upon the sources of revenue during the present period. "Throughout the country," we are told, "the people do not kill any living creature, nor drink intoxicating liquors," and again, "In this country there are no butcher's shops or distilleries in their market-places."¹ If this testimony could be relied on, one important branch of revenue, *viz.*, the revenue derived from the sale of liquors which is described in the *Arthaśāstra*, was conspicuous by its absence in the Gupta period. But it seems reasonable to conclude from the recorded notices of earlier as well as later times² that there was no wholesale abstention from drinking, although the ban of the Buddhist canon and of the *Smṛtis* must have exercised a profound influence in this direction.

Among the clay seals discovered by the late Theodore Bloch at Basārḥ (the site of ancient Vaiśālī) there are some which illustrate the system of provincial administration in vogue in Tirabhukti (modern Tirhut or North Behar) during the reign of Chandragupta II.³ One of these seals refers to the office of Treasurer of the War Department (*Raṇabhāṇḍāgārādhikaraṇa*). This slight hint is sufficient to show that in the provinces of the Gupta Empire (and almost certainly in the central

¹ Legge's tr., p. 43.

² See above, p. 182, and below, pp. 227-8.

³ See Ann. Report of the Arch. Survey of India, 1903-4, pp. 101-122.

government as well) the department of military finance was separated from that of civil finance. This specialisation of the administrative machinery undoubtedly indicates a considerable development of the revenue arrangement as compared with the earlier times.

With regard to the reign of Skandagupta, the grandson of Chandragupta II, Vincent Smith mentions a specific financial expedient illustrating the fiscal policy of the Guptas during an extraordinary crisis. He writes,¹ "The gold coins of his (Skandagupta's) early and prosperous days agree in both weight and fineness with those of his ancestors, but the later issues which increased in gross weight so as to suit the ancient Hindu *suvarṇa* exhibit a decline in the amount of pure gold in each piece from 108 to 73 grains." Unfortunately there is some difficulty in accepting this view, as it has been suggested² that the debased gold coins belonged to the most easterly Gupta dominions.

We may next mention some records of a dynasty belonging primarily to the region of the Deccan and South India, in as much as these may be used to throw light upon certain current aspects of the land-revenue system in the North. The land grants of the Vākāṭaka kings made in favour of Brāhmaṇas frequently refer to a group of immunities belonging to the lands of Brāhmaṇas versed in the four Vedas. These are specified in the more complete examples³ as consisting of the following :—

- (a) *akaraḍāyī*,
- (b) *abhatachchatraprāveśyah*,
- (c) *apāramparagobalīvarddah*,

¹ *Early History of India*, 4th ed., p. 328.

² Cf. Allen, *Catalogue of Coins of the Gupta Dynasties and of Śaśāṅka, king of Gauḍa*, Introd., pp. xcviii-xcx.

³ GI, Nos. 55, 56 ; IA, XII, No. 35 ; Ep. Ind., XV, No. 4.

- (d) *apuṣpakṣīrasandohah*,
- (e) *achārāsanacharmāṅgārah*,
- (f) *alavanakṣinnakrenīkhānakah*,
- (g) *apaśumedhyah*,
- (h) *sanidhih*,
- (i) *sopanidhih*,
- (j) *sakṣiptopakṣiptah*.

The first term undoubtedly refers to the exemption of the grant from taxes in general. The second is translated by Fleet¹ as 'not to be entered by the king's regular troops or by the king's umbrella-bearers,' but this is more probably identical with the frequent *achāṭabhaṭa* (*chhatra* being a Sanskritised form of the Prakrit original *chāṭa*), in which case it would refer to the usual immunity from entrance by the king's regular and irregular troops. The third term, according to Fleet² means that it did not carry with it the right to cows and bulls in succession of production, but a comparison with the equivalent term in the above-mentioned grant of the Pallava Śivaskandavarman *apāramparabalīvaddagahaṇam* shows it to refer to the immunity from the obligation of furnishing cattle in relays for transport. The fourth term, with which may be compared the phrases *adudhadadhigahaṇam* and *aharitakasākapupphagahaṇam* of Śivaskandavarman's grant, evidently refers to the immunity from the burden of supplying flowers and milk to the king's officers. The fifth and sixth terms are interpreted by Fleet to mean that it did not carry with it the right to the pasturage, hides and charcoal or to the mines for purchase of salt in a moist state.³ But apart from the doubtful rendering of the component items, this explanation cannot be

¹ GI, p. 240.

² *Ibid.*

³ The corresponding phrase for the sixth term in Ep. Ind., XV, No. 4, is translated by K. B. Pāthak and K. N. Dikshit as not 'yielding the right to purchase of fermenting drugs and mines.'

upheld, since the context evidently suggests an immunity granted in favour of the donee, and not the reservation of a right by the donor. We would suggest it to refer among other things to the immunity from the obligation of furnishing skins for seats to the wandering spies and charcoal (for fuel), as well as the immunity from fines for the purchase and digging of salt.¹ The eighth and ninth terms refer to the donee's privilege of acquiring treasures and deposits which ordinarily belonged to the king, while the tenth refers to his privilege of enjoying the fixed and unfixed taxes.

While the above inscriptions refer to the immunities and privileges belonging to the grants in favour of Brāhmaṇas, one of them shows that the strongest injunctions of the Smṛtis notwithstanding, these grants were specifically declared to be liable to resumption for breach of certain conditions. Thus the inscription GI, No. 55, after recording the donation of a village to 1,000 Brāhmaṇas, mentions a condition of the grant (*śāsanasthiti*) to be maintained by the Brāhmaṇas and the present as well as future rulers. This is to the effect that the village may be enjoyed by the Brāhmaṇas for as long as the Sun and the Moon endure, provided that they do not commit any treason against the kingdom, that they are not guilty of the offences of slaying Brāhmaṇas, theft, adultery and treason against the king, that they do not wage war and that they do no wrong to other villages. If the Brāhmaṇas act otherwise or approve of such acts, concludes this remarkable clause of the charter, the king will not be guilty of theft in the event of his resuming the grant.

At the end of the fifth or beginning of the sixth century of the Christian era, Kāmarūpa was ruled by a king called Bhūtiavarman whose great-great-grandson Bhāskaravarman was the contemporary of King Harṣavardhana of Thāneśvara in the

¹ It will be remembered that Manu, VII, 118, mentions the king's daily perquisites of food, drink and fuel from the villagers.

first half of the seventh century. Some light is thrown upon the revenue arrangements of this king by the discovery of the lost plates of the Nidhānpur grant of Bhāskaravarman.¹ There we are told that Bhūti-varman granted an *agrahāra* which owing to the loss of plates became liable to revenue (*karada*). Hence Bhāskaravarman issued a fresh charter granting the land to (the family of) the same donee on the condition that nothing was to be taken therefrom as revenue and according to 'the maxim of the barren land.'² The above inscription evidently shows that the resumption of revenue-free lands for want of royal charters was well known at this period. Further it probably points to an organised system for the regular inspection of revenue-free tenures by the State officers.

A series of seven copper-plate grants of the fifth and early part of the sixth centuries that have been brought to light in North Bengal during recent times is of great importance in illustrating the conditions of land-tenure and land-revenue administration in this outlying province of the Gupta Empire during the present period. These inscriptions may be numbered serially as follows :—

- I. Dhānāidaha (mutilated) copper-plate inscription of the time of the Gupta Emperor Kumāragupta I, dated

$$\frac{113 \text{ G. E.}}{432-433 \text{ A. C.}}$$
- II. Dāmodarpur copper-plate inscription of the time of the Gupta Emperor Kumāragupta I, dated $\frac{124 \text{ G. E.}}{443-444 \text{ A.C.}}$
- III. Do., dated $\frac{129 \text{ G. E.}}{449-450 \text{ A. C.}}$
- IV. Do., of the time of the Gupta Emperor Budhagupta, date and year lost.

¹ Ep. Ind., XIX, 19.

² *Bhūmichehhydanyāya* in the original. For expln. see below, p. 212, n. 4.

- V. Dāmodarpur copper-plate inscription of the time of the Gupta Emperor Budhagupta, date and year lost.
- VI. Pāhādpur copper-plate inscription of the time of the Gupta Emperor Budhagupta, dated $\frac{159 \text{ G. E.}}{479-480 \text{ A. C.}}$
- VII. Dāmodarpur copper-plate inscription of the time of the Gupta Emperor Bhānu(?)gupta, dated $\frac{214 \text{ G. E.}}{533-534 \text{ A.C.}}^1$

With the above series of inscriptions it is natural to compare another set of four inscriptions of a very similar character from the Faridpur District of Eastern Bengal, which have been assigned on palaeographical grounds to the latter half of the sixth and the first part of the seventh centuries. We propose to number them serially in the following way :—

- (A) Faridpur grant of the time of the Emperor Dharmāditya, dated his 3rd regnal year.
- (B) Do. of the time of the Emperor Dharmāditya, without date.
- (C) Do. of the time of the Emperor Gopachandra, dated his 19th regnal year.
- (D) Ghāgrāhāti grant of the time of the Emperor Samāchāradeva, dated his 14th regnal year.²

¹ For references see Ep. Ind., XVII, No. 23 (revised reading of No. 1) ; *Ibid*, XV, No. 7 (reading of Nos. II—V and VII) ; *Ibid*, XVII, p. 193 (for correction of dates). For information about contents of No. VI, I am indebted to my friend Mr. K. N. Dikshit of the Archaeological Survey of India, who is editing it in the Ep. Ind.

² For references to these inscriptions see IA, 1910 (A, B and C) and JASB, 1911 (D). The authenticity of these grants, denied by R. D. Banerjee (JASB, 1910, pp. 432-434) and vindicated by F. E. Pargiter (JASB, 1911, pp. 492-498), has since been established by the discovery of the Dāmodarpur plates.

The first question that arises in connection with these sets of records is the nature of the lands disposed of, and the conditions of their tenure. As regards the first point the most complete description is given in No. VII which comprises the following items :—

revenue-free (*samudayabāhya*),
 untilled (*aprahata*),
 fallow land (*khīla kṣetra*).¹

As the rate of sale mentioned in this particular grant (three *dīnāras* for each *kulyavāpa* ²) is also used in Nos. II and III, and as all these four inscriptions belong to the same district of Koṭivarṣa, it is reasonable to conclude that the same class of lands is to be understood in all these cases. The same also seems to be the case with Nos. III and VI where the lands apparently belong to different districts, and the rate of sale (*viz.*, two *dīnāras* for each *kulyavāpa* of land) is also different from the above. Indeed the land is expressly declared in No. III to be (as in the other cases) revenue-free, not previously settled, fallow land. These terms, we think, can only refer to the unappropriated waste lying on the outskirts of the settled villages. Indirect evidence to this effect is furnished by the vague descriptions of the situation of the assigned lands, and above all by the fact that the lands at the time of being made over to the assignees are required to be severed

¹ The above follows the tr. of R. G. Basak (Ep. Ind., XV, No. 7). In the present section the following abbreviations are used. R. G. B.=Radha Govinda Basak; F. E. P.=F. E. Pargiter; A. M. J. C.=Sir Ashutosh Mookerjee Silver Jubilee Commemoration Volumes, Vol. III, Orientalia, Part 2 (Calcutta, 1925).

² The gold coins of the Gupta Emperors consisted of the *dīnāras* (connected with the Latin '*denarius*'), and the native *suvarṇas*. *Kulyavāpa*, tr. by F. E. P. (IA, 1910, p. 214) as 'so much land as is usually sown with a *kulyā* of seed.'

according to the specified measures.¹ This can only mean that the lands before this time formed part and parcel of the unappropriated waste. Whether such lands after their disposal continued to be revenue-free, is a question which is not answered in the inscriptions, but the probability is that they became subject to a progressively increased taxation till the normal limit was reached. If this should be the case with the waste lands, we may be justified in concluding that the cultivable village area was not only assessed for the usual taxes, but also surveyed for revenue purposes according to the prevailing standards of land-measurement.

As regards the conditions of the sales, these lands are contemplated or declared to be held---

according to the custom of non-destruction of			
the principal ²	...	...	... No. I,
in perpetuity, according to the custom of (non-			
destruction of) the principal ³	...	...	... No. II,
with the right of perpetual endowment, and			
according to the custom of non-destruction			
(as above) ⁴	...	...	... No. III,

¹ The unit of land-measure mentioned in the above groups of inscriptions is 8×9 reeds (Nos. I, IV and VI), and 8×9 reeds 'by the hand of the famous and upright Sivachandra' (A and C). This unit, as Pargiter explains, was evidently an oblong consisting of 8 reeds in breadth and 9 reeds in length. With it Pargiter aptly compares the *kāṇi*, the commonest land-measure in East Bengal, which is not a square, but an oblong measuring 24×20 or 24×16 or 12×10 reeds, each reed consisting of a certain number of cubits.

² R. G. B. reads "*nīvidharmākṣayeṇa*" and tr. 'on condition of destruction of non-transferability.' As this runs counter to all other inscriptions of the same group, I suggest the reading *nīvidharmākṣayeṇa* which I construe as *nīvidharma-a-kṣayeṇa* and tr. as 'according to the custom of non-destruction of *nīvidharma*.'

³ I follow the tr. of *nīvidharma* by R. G. B.

⁴ I construe *apradākṣayanīvi* (F. W. Thomas's amended reading in Ep. Ind., XV, p. 133) as *apra-da-akṣayanīvi* in the light of the expressions

in perpetuity, according to the custom of non-
destruction (as above), and without the right
of alienation¹ ... No. IV,
with the right of perpetual endowment ... No. VII.

A perusal of the above list shows a substantial agreement as regards the conditions of tenure among all the inscriptions of the first group. The land alienations in every case are perpetual, but non-transferable. It would thus appear that the State reserved its right to the unappropriated waste to such an extent as to exclude even the possessors by right of sale from alienation of their holdings. This policy would be in keeping with the strictness of the Gupta administration with regard to the pious grants, of which mention has been made above.

A few words may next be said as regards the authorities entrusted with the disposal of the waste lands. Nos. II, III and VII, refer to the authority that receives the application (*viññāpya*) for purchase, obtains its verification from the record-keepers (*pustapālas*), secures the sale-price and conveys the land, but nothing is mentioned about its identity. No. 1 distinctly mentions the heads of families,² named and unnamed Brāhmaṇas and the officer in charge of eight *kulas* in the village,³ as receiving the applications, while it mentions neighbouring heads of families⁴ as conveying the land after

apradādharmā in No. VII and *akṣayanīvi* in No. VI, and explained as above. Mr. R. G. B. construes it both as *apradākṣaya* and as *aprada-akṣaya* and tr. as 'according to the custom of nullification or continuation of the condition of non-transferability' (A. M. J. C., p. 481).

¹ *Apratikara* in the original.

² *Kuṭumbins*, usually tr. as 'householders.' I prefer to take it in its stricter sense of heads of households. Cf. Yāj., II, 45, who distinguishes clearly between the *kuṭumbins* and the *rikthins*.

³ I adopt R. G. B.'s restoration and translation of *grāmikāṣṭakulā-dhikaraṇa*.

⁴ *Prativāsikuṭumbins* in the original.

severance according to the specified measures. In No. IV the officer in charge of the eight *kulas*, the village headman, the heads of families and the leading men¹ of Palāśa-vṛndaka² expressly receive the application, while they send information of the same to the principal *prakṛtis* ('subjects'), the heads of families and the Brāhmaṇas of Chaṇḍagrāma,³ and the officer (in charge of eight *kulas*), the heads of families, the leading men and so forth convey the land after inspecting it and severing it as above. In No. VI the district officer and the office of the district headquarters at Puṇḍravardhana receive the application, while they send information of the same to the Brāhmaṇas, the leading men and the heads of families.

The difference in the nature of the superintending authority in the foregoing records corresponds to other differences as well. While Nos. II, III and VII refer to the same district (Koṭivarṣa), No. I refers itself to the district of Khāta- (or Khāda-) pāra, No. IV mentions only the division (*bhukti*) of Puṇḍravardhana but not the district (*viśaya*), while No. VI mentions neither the one nor the other, but merely the capital town of the same name. With this may be mentioned the fact already noticed that the prevailing rate of sale in Nos. IV and VI is different from the prevailing rate in Nos. II, III and VII. It is possible that we have here two sets of administrative arrangements for disposal of the unappropriated waste. In the one group (Nos. I and IV) the administrative authority consists of the officers in charge of the eight *kulas*, the leading men, the heads of families, the village headman and so forth. Evidently we have here to deal with a mixed body of

¹ I adopt the tr. of *mahattara* by F. E. P. (IA, 1910, p. 213).

² Apparently, as R. G. B. thinks, the headquarters of the provincial government.

³ Probably the village on whose outskirts the land was situated.

officials and non-officials. As regards the other group (Nos. II, III, VI and VII) it will be noticed that No. VI expressly contemplates the district officer and the office of the district-headquarters as receiving the application. Moreover, in No. VII which alone has preserved the seal intact the legend shows that the charter was issued by the office of the district headquarters of Koṭivarṣa.¹ From this it would follow that the authority charged with the disposal of the waste lands was, at least in the first instance, the headquarters office of the district in whose jurisdiction the land was situated. A connecting link between these two groups is furnished by Nos. IV and VI, which contemplate the Brāhmaṇas, the leading men and the heads of families, apparently of the nearest village, as receiving information of the application for purchase, possibly to enable them to offer their objections, if any.²

While on this subject we may say a few words on the constitution of the office of the district headquarters just mentioned. Nos. II, III, V and VII describe the district officer under different titles as carrying on the administration of the district town (*adhiṣṭhānādhikaraṇa*) with a guild-president, the leading merchant, the leading banker and the leading scribe³ at the top. The former term has been variously interpreted to mean 'an administrative board of the district'⁴ 'the royal tribunal in a city'⁵ and

¹ *Koṭivarṣādhiṣṭhānādhikaraṇasya* in the original. *Adhiṣṭhāna* by itself means only 'locality' or 'a town,' but as here used, it must mean the headquarters of the district.

² *Akṣudraprakṛtikūṭumbins* of No. IV evidently corresponds to the *brāhmaṇottaramahattarādikūṭumbins* of No. VI.

³ *Nagaraśreṣṭhī, sārthavāha, prathamakulika, prathamakāyastha* in the original. *Kulika*, is tr. by Bloch (ASR, 1903-4, p. 107ff.) as 'merchant,' while Vogel (*Antiq. of Chamba State*, p. 126) with less justice understands it to mean a tribe like that of the Khasas in Ancient Kashmir. It is tr. as 'artisan' by R. G. B.

⁴ R. G. B. (A.M.J.C.).

⁵ R. C. Majumdar, *Corporate Life*, 2nd ed., Add. and Corr.

with less justification as 'the office and probably the court of a district officer,' and a 'secretariat and advisory council.'¹ None of these explanations helps to throw light upon the affinities and the true character of the *adhikaraṇa*. An interesting side-light is thrown upon this point by the references in the general literature, and specially in the famous Sanskrit drama called the *Mṛchchhakaṭika* which is generally acknowledged to fall within the limits of the present period. A court of justice called *adhikaraṇa* is mentioned in the *Daśakumāracharita*² and judges called *Dharmādhi-karaṇas* are referred to in the *Pañchatantra*.³ Above all Act IX of the *Mṛchchhakaṭika*, describing the famous trial scene, refers to the king's judges (called *adhikaraṇikas* and *adhikaranabhojaks*) sitting in the court-house (*adhikaranamanḍapa*), who are assisted by the guild-president (*śreṣṭhin*), the scribes (*kāyasthas*) and so forth.⁴ It will be noticed that the 'leading scribe' of the epigraphs is represented by the 'scribes' of the drama, while the guild-president is common to both. It would thus appear that the *adhiṣṭhānādhi-karaṇa* of the Gupta Empire had its prototype in the *adhikaraṇa* at the capital contemplated in the drama, which by a natural extension of meaning (such as is seen in the later word *cutchery*) came to be applied to the office of the district headquarters as well. The above comparison, moreover, shows that in the place of the vague list of unspecified officers of the drama the inscriptions mention 'the leading artisan' and 'the leading merchant,' besides the guild-president and the chief scribe. If it be supposed that the *adhikaraṇa* of the drama represents the loosely organised institution of earlier times, that of the Gupta Empire would be a development of the

¹ Beni Prasad, *The State*, p. 297.

² & ³ See Jolly, *Recht und Sitte*, p. 134.

⁴ With these Jolly (*ibid*, p. 135) compares the *naigama* (merchant) and the *lekha* (clerk) of the *Smṛtis*.

same with a well-defined organisation and with the addition of administrative functions as well. The reversion of the Gupta institution to the type of administrative boards described by Megasthenes for the Maurya empire is no doubt a witness to the enduring influence of the popular *pañchāyats*.

We have thus found two sets of authorities entrusted with the administration of the waste lands, *viz.*, a selected body of officials and non-officials, and the office of the district headquarters. In the remaining group of inscriptions the administering authority is more uniform, but not so well-defined. There the authority receiving the application for purchase and disposing of the same is described as—

- the *adhikaraṇa*, and the *prakṛtis* headed by eighteen
specified leading men of the district ¹ ... (A),
the *adhikaraṇa* headed by named chief scribe ² and
leading men of the district (B),
the *adhikaraṇa* headed by named chief scribe and
leading men as well as unnamed principal *vyāpārins* (C),
the *adhikaraṇa* headed by named chief scribe, the
leading men of the district and other leading men,
as well as unnamed principal *vyavahārins* ... (D).

In A, B and C these authorities are also directly addressed by the applicant for grant of the land concerned to him, and in the first-named inscription they expressly signify the sale of the land by their direction. The vague and indefinite character of the agency contemplated in the above inscriptions

¹ *Viṣayamahattara*, tr. as above by F. E. P. who aptly compares the *janapada-mahattara* of the *Daśakumāracharita*.

² *Jyeṣṭhakāyastha*. Less satisfactory trs. are 'oldest official' (F. E. P.) and 'chief secretary' (R. G. B.). A chief secretary would be out of place in a district office, and a better equivalent for *jyeṣṭhakāyastha* would be the *sheristādār* of the Collector's office in a modern district of British India.

is obvious at the first sight. Of its constituent parts the *adhikarāṇa* headed by the chief scribe evidently corresponds to the Gupta institution of the same name. For the rest, the leading men of the district and the other leading men are apparently not private individuals, but are persons concerned with the administrative functions, for the *mahāmahattaras* and *mahattaras* are included in the Khālimpur grant of Dharmapāla¹ in a list of persons entrusted with the administration of the district (*viṣayavyavahārins*). The *vyāpārins* of C are evidently identical with the *vyavahārins* of D, both meaning administrative agents.² With them may be compared the *vyavahāri-jānapadas* of the Tippera plate of Lokanātha and the unnamed *viṣayavyavahārins* mentioned in the grant of Dharmapāla aforesaid. We are inclined to identify them with the *prakṛtis* of A, though the latter has the general sense of 'subjects.' It would thus appear that the authority charged with the administration of the lands concerned consists in this case of the district office and many named and unnamed minor officials. With this may be connected the fact that the legends on the seals of the inscriptions in all the cases in which they are preserved (A, B and C) refer to the office of the district (*viṣayādhikarāṇa*) in which the lands are evidently situated.

¹ Ep. Ind., IV, No. 34.

² *Vyāpārins*, tr. as 'principal traders of the district' (F. E. P.) and 'chief businessmen' (R. G. B. in A. M. J. C.), but *vyāpāram kurvati* is frequently used in the inscriptions in the sense of carrying on affairs of State, e.g., in the grant of the time of the Gurjara-Pratihāra Emperor Mahendrapāla II (Ep. Ind., XIV, No. 13). Also compare *vyāpārāya viniyukta* in C, said with reference to the district officers. *Vyavahārins* tr. as 'men of business' (F. E. P.) and 'administering agents or business men' (R. G. B.), but *samvyavaharati* is used in all the above inscriptions in the sense of 'administering' and tr. as such by R. G. B. The *vyavahārin* is mentioned in a list of officials charged with the execution of the land-grant in the Nidhanpur plate of Bhāskaravarman (Ep. Ind., XII, No. 13).

We are now in a position to discuss the question whether in the aforesaid cases the State shared the ownership of the soil with private parties. A definite answer to this question is suggested by Mr. R. G. Basak¹ who rejects the idea of State ownership of the lands concerned on the following grounds :—

- (a) The State could not alienate lands “without the consent or approval of the peoples’ representatives, the *mahattaras* and other businessmen of the province and the district, and sometimes even the common folk.”
- (b) The Faridpur grant No. I (A above) “mentions in very clear terms that $\frac{1}{6}$ of the sale proceeds in these transactions will go to the royal exchequer according to the law.” “It seems very clear, then, that the remaining $\frac{5}{6}$ of the price used to go to the funds of the village assemblies.”

His own idea vaguely suggested, rather than indicated, is that the ownership of the land belonged jointly to the State and the people, or that it belonged (on the analogy of South Indian village assemblies) to the village assemblies subject to the supervision of the king. In the same context he takes these grants to “belong to a period when the crown began to be recognised as absolute owner of all land,” in place of the people who were the original proprietors.

A careful consideration of the above arguments shows that they are not based upon sufficient grounds. We have already shown reasons for holding that the persons whom Mr. Basak understands to be the peoples’ representatives were more likely minor officials. In the two instances (Nos. IV and VI) in which the *Brāhmaṇas*, the principal subjects and the heads

¹ A. M. J. C., pp. 486-491.

of families are mentioned, they merely receive information ¹ of the application for purchase, it may be, for the hearing of any possible objections on their part. In any case the idea of "consent or approval" of these persons being necessary for the performance of the sale is not warranted by the evidence.

The second argument is based upon a mistranslation of the term *dharmasādbbhāga* which Mr. Basak, following the authority of the late Mr. Pargiter, ² translates as $\frac{1}{8}$ th of the sale proceeds. We may compare it with the similar clause in Nos. IV and VII *dharmaparatāvāptih* (meaning that the Emperor would thereby gain spiritual merit), and still more the clause in No. VI *arthopachayo[dharm]masādbbhāgāpyāyananācha bhavati* (meaning that the Emperor would acquire wealth as well as $\frac{1}{8}$ th of the spiritual merit).³ Now this comparison shows that the spiritual merit (*dharmā*) is distinguished from the sale proceeds. The true explanation of the above phrase is to be found in the sacred texts ⁴ making the king eligible to $\frac{1}{8}$ th of the spiritual merits as well as demerits of his subjects. As in all these cases the applicant for purchase of land signifies his intention of disposing of it for pious purposes, it is evident that the king in granting the application would share in the resulting spiritual merit.

The mention of South Indian village communities in this connection seems to us to be wholly inappropriate. In the Chola Empire the village assemblies which had a well-defined constitution and functions themselves exercised the right of purchase and sale of the village lands, the intervention of the

¹ *Anudarśayanti* in No. IV; *anubodhayanti* in No. VI.

² JASB, 1910, p. 197.

³ Also cf. the maxim quoted in D for justifying the grant, viz., that the land infested by wild animals is profitless as regards wealth that should accrue to the king, while land which is made fit for enjoyment by calves brings wealth as well as spiritual merit to the king.

⁴ Cf. Mahā. V, 131.12; XII, 69.79 ff.; XIII, 75.5.10, etc.

State officers (called *adhikārins* and so forth) being only occasional in character.¹ In North Bengal under the imperial rule of the Guptas, as we have seen, the village headman and heads of families, who may be held to be representatives of the village community, administered the State lands only in some cases with the association of officers in charge of eight *kulas*, while in other cases it was the district office that formed the administering authority. In East Bengal under the rule of the independent sovereigns of this period the representatives of the village community, if there were any, are not at all mentioned in connection with the administration of the land, which is entrusted to the district office and minor officials. Due weight must also be given to the fact that the charter for the disposal of the lands in the above cases was issued, as the surviving seal-legends show, by the district office alone.

The most decisive argument in favour of the exclusive State ownership of the class of lands mentioned in these inscriptions is furnished by the clause in the inscription No. VI aforesaid, where the grant is recommended on the ground that the Emperor would thereby acquire wealth (*i. e.*, the proceeds of sale) as well as the spiritual merit. Indirect evidence to the same effect is furnished by the elaborate official procedure prescribed in these epigraphs, which usually consisted of three processes :—

- (a) Formal application (*vijñāpyam*, *abhyarthanam*) by the intending purchaser, stating the object of purchase and frequently the current rate of sale.
- (b) Verification of the application by one or more record-keepers and their recommendation of the same.

¹ Cf. S. Krishnaswami Aiyangar, *Ancient India*, pp. 163-164.

- (c) Severance of the land sold and its conveyancing to the grantee after payment of the sale-price. Sometimes this is preceded (as in No. IV) by inspection of the leading men, etc., or (as in C and D) by the appointment of minor officials (*adhikaraṇajanas* and *karaṇikas*) as arbitrators (*kulavāras*).

In the region of modern Bundelkhand and Baghelkhand two dynasties were in power almost contemporaneously during the present period. These were the Parivrājaka Mahārājas of Dabhālā (or Dahālā) who were feudatories of the Gupta Empire with known dates ranging from 475-476 to 528-529 A. C., and the Mahārājas of Uchchakalpa whose known dates range from 493-494 to 533-534 A.C.¹ The land-grants of the Parivrājaka Mahārājas are made in nearly all known examples in favour of Brāhmaṇas, but in one case² half a village is granted by means of a copper-plate to a certain person for maintenance of a temple. All the inscriptions contain the donor's solemn injunction to the members of his family and his feudatories in the future to cause no obstruction in the enjoyment of the land. More specifically, the land is declared in one case³ to be enjoyable by the donee in the line of his sons and grandsons, with immunity from the police-tax.⁴ Among the privileges and immunities accompanying the grant are mentioned in all the known examples the right to the *udraṅga* and the *uparikara*, together with the exemption from entrance by the king's regular and irregular troops. To these is added in three cases⁵ the immunity from the police-tax above mentioned.

¹ All the inscriptions of the Uchchakalpa Mahārājas, with the exception of GI, No. 26, have been found in the region of Bundelkhand.

² GI, No. 25. The principal records of this dynasty for our present purpose are GI, Nos. 21, 22, 23, 25, and Ep. Ind., VIII, No. 28.

³ GI, No. 23.

⁴ For this tr. of *chauravarjyam* see below, p. 211.

⁵ GI, Nos. 21 and 23; Ep. Ind., VIII, 28.

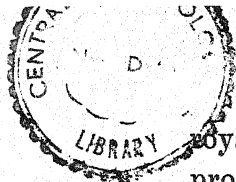
In the above it will be noticed that the religious grants are, as usual, perpetual and heritable by the donee, and exempted from the customary burdens of the village. The other clauses introduce us to a number of technical terms of revenue for the first time. As regards *udraṅga*, Bühler¹ doubtfully interpreted it to mean 'the share of the produce collected usually for the king,' while Fleet tentatively explained² *uparikara* as 'the tax levied on cultivators who have no proprietary right in the soil.' We would suggest for *udraṅga* the meaning of revenue imposed upon the permanent tenants, and for *uparikara* that of a similar impost levied on the temporary tenants. These interpretations may be justified on the following grounds:—

- (a) As Bühler first pointed out, the lexicon of Śāsvata gives for *udraṅga* the equivalent *uddhārā* and *udgrantha*. Now Marathi *udhar* means 'in the gross,' and *udhar̥jamābandī* means 'assessing the total revenue of a village upon the chief proprietor, leaving it to him to distribute the proportion.' Again, *upari* (vulgo *upri* in Marathi) means the 'cultivator not belonging originally to a village, but residing and occupying land in it either upon a lease for a stipulated term of years, or at the pleasure of the proprietor.'³
- (b) The above interpretation fits in with the obvious antithesis between *udraṅga* and *uparikara* which occur side by side in a large number of North Indian inscriptions. It also corresponds to the distinction between *khud-kasht* and *pāi-kasht* tenants of later times.
- (c) In some of the States of Rajputana in later times permanent possessors (called *biswādārs*) existed in the

¹ IA, XII, p. 189, n. 3, followed by Fleet, GI, p. 97; n. 6.

² GI, p. 98 n.

³ H. H. Wilson, Glossary of Judicial and Revenue terms, etc., s.v. *udhar* and *upri*.



royal demesne side by side with the tenants without proprietary rights.¹

As to the term *choravarjjam* (GI, No. 21) and its equivalents *chauravarjjam* (GI, No. 23) and *choradrohakavarjjam* (GI, No. 25) Fleet explained them to mean 'with the exception of the right to fines imposed on thieves.' But this explanation is improbable for the following reasons:—

- (a) The context in which it stands shows it to be an immunity granted in favour of the donee, and not a right reserved to himself by the donor.
- (b) There is no evidence to show that the transfer of civil jurisdiction was ever contemplated as possible in respect of the pious grants of land.
- (c) Whatever might be the case with the minor offences, jurisdiction over criminals was certainly not exercised by the village authorities. Hence the question of its transfer would not arise in connexion with the grants of single villages or village lands mentioned in the inscriptions.

We propose to explain *choravarjjam* and its equivalents as referring to the immunity of the donee from the tax imposed upon the villagers for village police. In favour of this view may be mentioned the fact that the *Arthaśāstra* uses the revenue-term *chorarajjū* apparently in the sense of a fee or tax payable by the villagers for protection against thieves.² In modern times, too, the tax for the maintenance of the village police (called *chaukidāri*) is a well-known institution in British India.

Turning to the records of the *Mahārājas* of *Uchchakalpa*, we find that while one of their known land-grants³ is made in favour of a *Brāhmaṇa*, nearly all the rest⁴ are concerned

¹ Baden-Powell, *Land Systems*, Vol. II, p. 327.

² See above, p. 41.

³ GI, No. 26.

⁴ GI, Nos. 25, 27, 28, 29, *Ep. Ind.*, XIX, 21.

with donations to persons of various classes (including writers, merchants and worshippers of the *Bhāgavata* sect), for the purpose of repair and worship of temples. The latter class of donations, which is called in one of the above inscriptions¹ by its technical title of *devāgrahāra*, is important as showing how pious grants could be made at this period to classes other than the Brāhmanas. In one particular inscription,² the grant of two villages is made in the first instance to a certain person (probably a courtier), who afterwards conveys it to another (apparently a Brāhmana)³ for the purpose of a temple, and the king's sanction is given thereto according to 'the maxim of the uncultivated land'⁴ by means of a copper-plate charter. This seems to hint at another class of royal donations of land which were made in favour of courtiers or chiefs, and it appears to show that such lands could not be alienated without the king's consent. The conditions of the pious grants are of the usual kind :—

They are to continue as long as the Sun and the Moon shall endure, they are to be exempted from all taxes (*kara*), they are to be accompanied with the assignment of all revenues (*pratyāya*) accruing to the king, and they contain the donor's solemn injunction to future kings of his lineage not to confiscate but to protect the grant, and not to take the customary taxes and revenues.⁵

¹ GI, No. 27.

² GI, No. 31.

³ This may be inferred from the personal names of the donees, Pulindabhaṭa and Kumārasvāmin.

⁴ *Bhūmichchhidraṇyāya* in the original. This term henceforth occurs with constant frequency in the inscriptions. It implies the grant of full right of ownership, such as would be acquired by a person making fallow land cultivable for the first time. Cf. Bühler, *Ep. Ind.*, I, p. 74 n.; Jolly, *Recht und Sitte*, English tr., p. 197.

⁵ To the above GI, No. 27, adds the item 'exempted from the police-

³ (*chordāṇḍa-varjyam*).

In other words, the grants are meant to be perpetual, heritable and revenue-free, and to involve the assignment of all the royal revenues. In GI, No. 31, which we have suggested above to refer to a grant in favour of a courtier, the villages are granted,

‘with the *udraṅga* and the *uparikara*,’

‘with the exemption for entrance by irregular and regular troops,’

‘to last as long as the Sun and the Moon shall endure,’

‘with immunity from the police-tax.’

From this it appears that such grants were usually perpetual and (in part) revenue-free, though not alienable by the donee.

The specific privileges and immunities conferred upon the donees in the above cases illustrate as usual the financial and other burdens imposed upon the ordinary revenue-paying villages. In the usual formula of such grants the land is given

‘with *udraṅga* and *uparikara*,’ ‘with the exemption from entrance by irregular and regular troops,’

‘with the exemption from the police-tax,’ and in one case¹ ‘with the tax on ploughs’ (*halikākara*).

In the same connection the householders headed by the Brāhmaṇas and artisans, or else the residents headed by the Brāhmaṇas, are ordered to pay to the donee the customary tax called *bhāgabhogakara*, *hiranya* and other revenues. Of the heads of revenue above mentioned, the *udraṅga* and the *uparikara* as well as the police-tax, as we have seen, were in vogue in the kingdom of the Parivrājaka Mahārājas who belonged to the same period. We have elsewhere explained these terms to mean respectively the assessment upon permanent as well as temporary tenants, and the tax imposed upon the villagers for the village police. The term *hiranya*, as we have mentioned, occurs in the Arthaśāstra and the Smṛtis as a revenue item meaning the

¹ Ep. Ind., XIX, 21.

tax in cash for certain special kinds of crops. From this period it is repeatedly mentioned in the land grants of Northern India. On the other hand, the tax on ploughs, which we here meet with for the first time, is practically unknown to the technical literature. From the mention of a special *dūtaka* for recording the release of the assigned land from the burden of the plough-tax in one inscription,¹ it would seem that this tax was administered by a special branch of the revenue department. As to the *bhāgabhogakara* tax it was translated by Kielhorn² as 'share of the produce,' but more often it has been taken to consist of three distinct items and translated as such.³ We propose to identify it with the usual grain-share of the king, called *bhāga* in the Arthasāstra and *bali* in the Smṛtis. This is supported by a passage of the Arthasāstra,⁴ where persons occupying fields and embanked reservoirs (*setu*) from private owners on the condition of *bhāgabhoga* are distinguished from those who hold the same on the condition of *avakraya*, *prakraya*, *ādhi* (mortgage) and so forth. *Bhāgabhoga* in this case refers to the condition of payment of a specific share of the resulting product. To the above list of revenues from the villages GI No. 27 adds the item *śulka*, while GI No. 31 has *āvātāya*. The former term, as we have seen, is well-known in the technical literature as a designation of tolls and customs duties, and we have traced it back to a record of the time of the Satrap Rudradāman in the 2nd century A.C. With regard to the latter, Fleet⁵ held it to consist of two items, viz., *āvāta* and *āya*, both of which were to him of

¹ Ep. Ind., XIX, 21.

² *Ibid*, VII, p. 160.

³ Cf. the trs., 'shares, rights of easement, taxes' (R. D. Banerjee in Ep. Ind., XV, No. 23; *Ibid* XV, No. 18), 'share and use, tax in kind' (Vogel, *Antiq. of the Chamba State*, pp. 167-169).

⁴ III, 9.

⁵ GI, p. 138 n.

uncertain meaning. We would propose to identify it with *bhūtavātapratyāya* of very frequent occurrence in the later inscriptions, and would accordingly translate it as 'revenue derived from the elements,' whatever that might mean.

We may mention in the present place a land grant of the Mahārāja Bhīmasena II, dated $\frac{282 \text{ G.E.}}{601 \text{ A.C.}}$ which belongs to the region of modern Chhattisgarh in the Central Provinces.¹ In it the village is granted 'according to *bhadrabhoga*,' 'with all revenues,' 'to last as long as the destruction of the world,' while the residents thereof are required to pay to the donee the customary revenues in kind (*meva*), in gold coins (*suvarṇa*) and in cash (*hiranya*) and so forth. In the above the term *bhadrabhoga* is of uncertain meaning, while the mention of the contribution in coin along with that in cash is altogether exceptional in character. But otherwise the conditions of the grant are of the usual kind.

In the mainland of Gujarat there flourished during the present period two principal dynasties, viz., the Traikūṭakas who held sway in Southern Gujarat in the latter half of the 5th century, and the Kāṭachuris who were supreme in the lower Narmada valley in the 6th century. The land grants of the Traikūṭaka kings² contain the clause that the grants are to continue 'as long as the Sun and the Moon, etc., shall endure,' 'to be exempted from the police-tax,'³ 'to be immune

¹ Ep. Ind., IX, 53.

² Ep. Ind., X, No. 13; XI, No. 21, etc.

³ *Chorarājāpathyakārivarjjam* in the original, which we identify with the *choravarjjam* of other inscriptions. Hultsch (Ep. Ind., XII, No. 21) takes *chorarājāpathya* along with the following *achātabhaṭapraṇēśya*, and translates the whole as 'not to be entered by irregular or regular soldiers unless in order to arrest robbers or persons guilty of high treason.' But this interpretation is contradicted by the fact that the two terms occur separately in a few inscriptions.

from entrance by irregular and regular troops,' 'to be exempted from all taxes (*ditya*)' and 'unpaid labour (*viṣṭi*),' 'to be enjoyed in the line of the donee's sons, grandsons and so forth,' and that no one is to cause obstruction to the donee while enjoying, cultivating or assigning it. With the above may be compared the clause in a land-grant of a feudatory

of the Kaṭachuri kings, dated $\frac{\text{K. E. 292}}{540-541 \text{ A. C.}}$ It is to the

effect that the grant

'is to last as long as the Sun and the Moon, etc., shall endure,'

'is to be accompanied with the assessment upon permanent tenants (*udraṅga*), the rent from temporary tenants (*uparikara*) and the revenue from the elements and winds (*bhūtavātapratyāya*),'

'is not to be entered by irregular and regular troops,

'is to be held according to the maxim of the uncultivated land,'

'is to be enjoyed by the donee in the line of his sons and so forth,' and that

'no one is to obstruct the donee while enjoying cultivating, causing to be cultivated, and assigning the land.'

In the same context the residents of the village are required to pay the customary contribution in kind,¹ the tax in cash and other dues.

It would seem from the above that in Gujarat during the 5th and 6th centuries the pious grants continued to be made on the usual conditions of earlier times. It further appears that the older heads of revenue consisting of contributions in kind and in cash, forced labour and the like were in vogue at this time. A new item of revenue is the *bhūtavāta-pratyāya*

¹ *Meya* in the original, meaning 'what is to be measured,' which we identify with the more usual *bhāgabhogakara*. This term may be traced back, as we have seen, to the period of the Śātavāhana kings.

which is henceforth constantly found in the inscriptions. We have translated it literally as 'a revenue derived from the elements and the winds,' but its precise meaning is still uncertain.¹

In the region of the Kathiawar peninsula there arose at the end of the 5th century a foreign dynasty, that of the Maitrakas of Valabhī whose rule lasted almost up to 778 A.C., when they were apparently overthrown by the Arabs. The land-grants of these kings, of which the earliest belongs to 183 G.V.E.² 501 A.C., comprise donations to the *Brāhmaṇas*, temples and monasteries, which are indicated by their technical titles of *brahmadeya*, *devāgrahāra*, *devavihāra*, and, more generally, those of *dharmadeya* and *devadeya*. These grants, besides assigning various specific privileges to be mentioned below, usually contain the clause

that the grant 'is to last as long as the Sun and the Moon, etc., shall endure,' 'is to be enjoyed in the lineage of the donee's sons and grandsons,' 'is made according to the maxim of the uncultivated land,' and that 'no one is to obstruct the donee in cultivating, causing to be cultivated or assigning the land in accordance with the usual rules of *brahmadeya* lands.'³

In connection with these clauses it may be noticed that the inscriptions frequently refer to the rule of gift or

¹ Very similar to the land grants of the Kaṭachuris are those of Buddharāja of the same family belonging to the region of Broach and dated $\frac{360 \text{ K.E.}}{609 \text{ A.C.}}$ and $\frac{361 \text{ K.E.}}{610 \text{ A.C.}}$ (Ep. Ind., XII, No. 7 and *ibid*, VI, No. 29).

For the mysterious 'revenue from the elements' they however substitute the more general 'receipts of all royal dues,' while they add the item of 'immunity from unpaid labour.'

² Ep. Ind., XVI, No. 4.

³ More generally in IA, Vols. VI and XIV, 'no one is to obstruct the donee, while it is enjoyed according to the rule of *devāgrahāra* or of *devavihāra*.'

enjoyment of the *brahmadeya* land, the *devāgrahāra* land and so forth. This undoubtedly proves the prevalence of an established tenure in respect of the pious grants, involving as usual the conditions of perpetuity and enjoyment of all royal dues as well as full rights of user.

The list of privileges conferred upon the donees illustrates, as usual, the burdens devolving upon the ordinary revenue-paying villages. The usual clauses of the grants are to the effect that they are made—

‘with *udraṅga* and *uparikara*,’ ‘with the contribution in grain (*dhānya*) and in cash (*hiranya*),’ ‘with the revenue from the elements and the winds’ (*bhūtavāta*), ‘with forced labour as it becomes due,’ and in one case, ‘with the ten offences.’

All these items with the exception of the last are familiar heads of revenue dating from earlier times. A specific reference to the *udraṅga* occurs in one of the Maitraka land grants¹ where we are told that King Kharagraha II of this dynasty made liberal grants of *udraṅga* and other gifts. The item of forced labour is apparently referred to in another Maitraka grant² conveying immunity to the donor from the contributions in the shape of gifts and of forced labour. The use of the expression ‘as it becomes due’ in connection with ‘forced labour’ evidently shows that it could be levied only on specified occasions. The contributions in the shape of gifts just mentioned evidently correspond to the gifts of affection (*pranaya*) referred to in the inscription of the Great Satrap Rudradāman.³ Another Maitraka grant⁴ distinguishes the revenue term *bhāgabhoga* from the contribution in grain (*dhānya*) above mentioned. Probably the latter was a fixed

¹ G. I., p. 177.

² Ep. Ind., III, No. 46. I follow the translation of *dānakara-viṭṭollakara viśuddham* suggested by Hultzsch.

³ Above, p. 184.

⁴ G. I., No. 39.

contribution in kind unlike the former which consisted of a share of the produce.

Among the new items of revenue which we now meet with for the first time is the one indicated by the term '*the ten offences*' in one of the Maitraka grants aforesaid.¹ This clause, which henceforth occurs with considerable frequency in the North Indian inscriptions, was first explained by Fleet² to involve the donee's right to the proceeds of fines for commission of ten offences by the villagers. The above explanation has generally been followed in later times, and it has even been taken³ to imply the donee's right of jurisdiction over the offences concerned. The only difference of opinion has existed with regard to the identity of the 'ten offences.' For while Fleet⁴ tentatively took them to consist of three specified sins of the body, three of the mind, and four of speech, Jolly⁵ connected them with a list of ten chief crimes mentioned by Nārada (I. 11 ff), and Hiralāl⁶ identified them with a list of ten sins mentioned in the Śukranīti (III, 6).⁷ A recent writer,⁸ while justly pointing to the improbability of offences of the mind being made the subject of legal punishment, is constrained to take the phrase in the sense of judicial fines in general. Leaving these minor points out of account, the fundamental objection that may be urged against Fleet's interpretation of *daśāparādha* is that there is no

¹ Ep. Ind., IV, No. 8 (dated $\frac{286 \text{ G.E.}}{605-606 \text{ A.C.}}$).

² G. I., pp. 189n and 218.

³ Cf. B. C. Mazumdar in JBORS, 1916, p. 53n.

⁴ Loc. cit.

⁵ *Recht und Sitte*, p. 123.

⁶ Ep. Ind., IX, p. 47n.

⁷ To the above we may add the explanation of B. C. Mazumdar, who after mentioning (*loc. cit.*) that the phrase was till lately in vogue in permanent leases in the Sonapur State, quotes the opinion of some elders to the effect that it included 'adultery, assault, defamation and offences relating to village roads and water reservoirs.'

⁸ Beni Prasad, *The State in Ancient India*, p. 303.

authority for the supposition that the grant of rights of jurisdiction was ever contemplated in the case of holders of religious grants. The phrase undoubtedly stands for a kind of income accruing to the king from the villages, since it is included along with the contributions in grain and in domestic animals in a list of the king's receipts (*utpatti*) in the Cambay grant of the Rāṣṭrakūṭa Govinda IV.¹ Its precise nature is indicated by the clauses of a Nepal grant of the sixth century,² recording a royal dedication of a village to a Buddhist establishment. There the privileges conferred upon the village are declared to comprise, among other things, the liability of the person alone of the delinquent to be seized by the king's officers in the event of the commission of five specified offences. It thus seems that the term *daśāparādha*, as used in the above and subsequent land-grants, refers to the right of the donee to be exempted at least in part from the ordinary penalties for the commission of some traditional offences by the villagers.³

Of other terms now met with for the first time, we have an instance in a land-grant of the same dynasty dated 207 G.E.,⁴ 527 A.C., mentioning how a village is granted not only 'with the contribution in cash' and 'with the income from the elements,' but also 'with the *śaivara*.' The meaning of this last term has not yet been explained, but considering that it stands for the contribution in grain (*dhānya*) of other inscriptions, and shares with the contribution in cash the distinction of being the most important charge on land, we are inclined to take it to mean some form of contribution in kind.

¹ Ep. Ind., VII, p. 36.

² See below, p. 233.

³ The above sense, moreover, exactly fits in with the clause *sahya-daśāparādha* (usually tr. as 'with toleration for the ten sins') of some later grants.

⁴ Ep. Ind., XVII, No. 7.

Another reference to a new revenue term may perhaps be found in some inscriptions of the Maitrakas¹ mentioning that the land is granted to the donee with the exception of the endowments previously given in favour of temples and Brāhmaṇas, and the Brāhmaṇas' twentieth (*brāhmaṇa-vimsati*). This last term has been taken to mean a tithe imposed upon the villages for the benefit of the Brāhmaṇas. This interpretation may be justified by a reference to the conditions prevailing in certain States of Rajputana in later times. There the Brāhmaṇas, besides obtaining grants of land from the Crown, received petty tithes from the agriculturists. Such items comprised the *serana* or one *seer* in every *maund*, being the fortieth part of the grain of the summer harvest.²

Some light is thrown upon the methods of land revenue administration in Kathiawar at this time by the mention of two officers in the land-grants of the Maitrakas. The *dhruvādhikaraṇika*,³ as his title suggests, was in charge of the office of *dhruvas*. The term *dhruvas* or *dhruvs*, as Bühler pointed out long ago,⁴ was still applied in Kathiawar and Cutch in his time to denote persons who superintended the collection of land revenue by the farmers on behalf of the king.⁵ The above office, therefore, carries the method of farming of the land revenue in Kathiawar back to the sixth and seventh centuries. The second class of officers is the *anutpan-nadānasamudgrāhaka*, meaning 'one who is charged with the

¹ Ind. Antiq., VII, pp. 75, 79, 85, etc.; *ibid*, XV, Ep. Ind., VIII, 20 A.

² Cf. Tod, *Annals of Rajasthan*, ed. W. Crooke, p. 597, quoting an ancient inscription dated 'nearly seven centuries' before his time.

³ Ind. Antiq., IV, p. 175; W. Z. K. M., Vol. VII, p. 298. Some Maitraka inscriptions (e.g. Ind. Antiq., V, p. 205, Ep. Ind., III, No. 46) have in place of *dhruvādhikaraṇika* the expression *dhruvasthānādhikaraṇika* which Bühler took to consist of two distinct titles, but probably both terms apply to one and the same officer.

⁴ Ind. Antiq., Vol. V, *loc. cit.*

⁵ Ep. Ind., IV, No. 29, and VIII, No. 22.

forcible collection of the unrealised so-called voluntary gifts of the subjects.' The existence of this office evidently points to a regular administrative organisation for collection of the tax in question. With this agrees the fact already mentioned that the *dāna* is in one inscription described as a regular tax (*kara*).

CHAPTER IV

THE EPOCH OF HARSAVARDHANA.

In the first half of the seventh century the most considerable power in Northern India was undoubtedly that of Kanauj under the famous Emperor Harṣavardhana (c.606-648 A.C.). In the two known land-grants ¹ of this potentate, which belong to the region of the modern United Provinces, the grant is made

‘with the *udraṅga*,’

‘with all revenues that might accrue to the king
(*rājākula*),’

‘with the immunity from all burdens,’

‘with the piece taken out from the district’,²

‘to be enjoyed by the sons, grandsons, and other lineal descendants of the donee,’

‘to last as long as the Sun and the Moon shall endure,’

‘according to the maxim of the uncultivated land.’

In the same connection the residents are required to pay the customary revenues including the following specific items :

‘the contribution in kind (*bhāgabhogā*), consisting of
what is to be weighed and what is to be measured
(*tulyameya*),’

‘the contribution in cash (*hiraṇya*).’

It would seem from the above that the conditions of the pious grants in Northern India continued to be of the usual kind, while the heads of revenue were those known to earlier times. A new clause which is here met with for the first time refers to the piece being taken out from the district. This occurs in a

¹ Ep. Ind., IV, No. 29, and VIII, No. 22.

² *Viṣayādudhṛtapīṇḍah* in the original.

Nepal land-grant of the same or immediately following period that we shall presently notice, but its precise meaning cannot be ascertained.

With the land-grants of Harṣa just mentioned may be considered the grant of his younger contemporary Bhāskara-varman, king of Kāmarūpa.¹ The grant was issued from the donor's victorious camp at Kaṇasuvārṇa in the Murshidabad district of Bengal, but it probably refers to the region of the Karatoyā river on the boundary between Bengal and Assam. The grant mentions in a list of officers concerned with the donation of the land the *bhāṇḍāgārādhikṛta* and the *utkhetayitā*. The former was evidently the officer in charge of the royal store-house, the latter is apparently identical with the *autkhetika* mentioned in a list of oppressors from whose visit a village is exempted in the Nowgong grant of Balavarman of the tenth century A. C.²

In the region of Southern Gujarat one of the principal ruling dynasties during the 7th and early part of the 8th centuries was the Gurjaras of Broach, who belonged to the same stock as the imperial dynasty of Kanouj in later times. The phraseology of the earlier land-grants of the Gurjara kings³ is very similar to those of the Kaṭachuri king Buddharāja, while their later grants⁴ closely correspond to the usual formulae of the Maitraka grants. These grants, then, are important only as showing how under all those dynasties of foreign origin, the items of revenue and the conditions of the religious grants remained unchanged as before.

A very remarkable account of the revenue conditions prevailing in India in the first part of the seventh century A. C. is given by Hiuen Tsang, the great Chinese

¹ Ep. Ind., XII, No. 13 ; *ibid*, XIX, No. 19.

² See below, p. 248.

³ *cf.* Kielhorn's *List of Inscriptions of Northern India*, inscns. Nos. 395 and 396, Ep. Ind., V.

⁴ *cf.* *Ibid*, Nos. 708 and 709.

pilgrim, who visited almost every part of India except the extreme south between the years 629 and 645 A. C. In the course of his general description of the country, prefacing the detailed narrative of his travels in its different parts, he writes,¹ "As the government is generous, official requirements are few. Families are not registered and individuals are not subject to forced labour contributions.....Taxation being high and forced labour being sparingly used, every one keeps to his hereditary occupation and attends to his patrimony. The king's tenants pay $\frac{1}{3}$ of the produce as rent." The precise import of this extract, which has not yet been properly explained, can only be understood in the light of the conditions of land-tenure and land revenue in vogue in China in the time of the pilgrim and still earlier. Now the fundamental feature of Chinese public economy in ancient times was the system of public distribution of land known as *tsing tien*, which is attributed to the Emperor Shi-huang-ti (2698-2599 B.C.). Under this system "land was distributed to families in groups of eight and was practically rented from government, rent being paid by labour on the central plot with reversion to the government on death or disability."² This remarkable form of State Socialism was replaced by a system of private ownership of land in 350 B. C., but it was revived in a qualified fashion in 280 A.C. and continued till 780 A.C.³ Again, there existed in China from early times besides the land-tax, other direct taxes such as the contribution in the form

¹ Watters' tr., *Yuan Chwang*, Vol. I, p. 176. In the original the last extract is *chü-t'ien-k'ou-fen*, which, according to Watters' explanation (*ibid*, p. 177), literally means that every one cultivates his ancestral farm or field.

² M. P. Lee, *The Economic History of China* (New York, 1921), p. 34.

³ For a complete account of the *tsing tien* system, see Chen Hsün-Chang, *The Economic Principles of Confucius and his School* (New York, 1911), Vol. II, pp. 497-534 ; also cf. M. P. Lee, p. 440.

of personal service, the poll-tax and the family-tax.¹ According to a famous law of 624 A. C., it was declared that 100 *mows* of the public land were thenceforth to be given to every man above eighteen, 40 *mows* to an aged or sick man, 30 *mows* to a widow and so forth. "All of them took 20 *mows* of the land received as perpetual property, and the rest as their share per mouth. 'Mouth-share' means the share of each person in the land belonging to the government." "Among all the recipients of public land each adult man contributed annually two loads of rice, which was called *sow* (land-tax or land-rent). Each family annually contributed a certain amount of silk, cloth, flax or a combination of them. Such a tax was called *Yung* (family-tax). In addition, each man was supposed to do public service for a certain number of days in the year; from 20 to 50 days. Such a tax was called *Dew* (labour-tax or poll-tax)."²

From a careful consideration of the above we can deduce the purport of Hiuen Tsang's observations about the conditions of land revenue in India in his time. In the first place, it is noticeable that Hiuen Tsang, like Fa Hien at an earlier period, assimilates the ordinary revenue-paying lands of the country that he visited to the public land of his mother-country. To him as to his predecessor the cultivators paying the usual grain-share to the State were the king's tenants. Evidently, then, the State in India was held at this time, virtually, if not legally, to be the owner of the soil. On the other hand Hiuen Tsang's evidence is important as showing that because of the moderation of the State demands, the cultivators practically enjoyed hereditary possession of their holdings. In the second place, it should be observed that Hiuen Tsang declares the burden of forced service in one place to be

¹ Chen Huan-Chang, pp. 638-682.

² For a full history of these taxes see M. P. Lee, pp. 229-230. Cf. Chen Huan-Chang, pp. 519, 650.

non-existent, and in another place to be limited. Evidently it was very mild as compared with the Chinese rule of personal service from 20 to 50 days in the year. The land grants of this period, it will be seen, are often accompanied with a clause conferring upon the donee the right to forced labour (*viṣṭi*) as it falls due. In the third place, Hiuen Tsang mentions only the king's grain-share (corresponding to the *bhāgabhogakara* of the contemporary and earlier records), which according to him was fixed at the rate of $\frac{1}{6}$. Evidently, then, the contribution in cash (*hiranya*) paid by the cultivators was held by him to be of too exceptional a character to merit a separate mention.

In the course of his observations on the revenue conditions of the country, Hiuen Tsang states,¹ "Tradesmen go to and for bartering their merchandise after paying light duties at ferries and barrier-stations." These evidently refer to the *tara-deyas* and *gulma-deyas* of the technical literature. Another source of revenue, although not directly mentioned by Hiuen Tsang, may be inferred from his description of the general condition of the people. He writes,² "There are distinctions in the use of their wines and other beverages. The wines from the vine and the sugarcane are the drink of the Kṣatriyas; the Vaiśyas drink a strong distilled spirit; the Buddhist monks and the Brahmins drink syrup of grapes and of sugarcane; the low mixed castes are without any distinguishing drink." Now Manu³ mentions three kinds of liquors (*surā*), viz., those distilled from molasses (*gaudī*), from ground rice (*paṣṭi*) and from the *madhuka* flowers or from grapes or honey (*mādhvī*). The wine from the sugarcane and the wine mentioned by Hiuen Tsang, evidently correspond to the first and the third classes of Manu's enumeration. The testimony of the Chinese pilgrim about the drinking of these wines

¹ Watters, Vol. I, p. 178.

² *Ibid.*, loc. cit.

³ IX, 45.

by the Kṣatriyas is borne out by the commentators, who understand Manu's text to mean that while all his three kinds of wines were forbidden to the Brāhmaṇas, the Kṣatriyas and the Vaiśyas were not excluded from the second and third classes. Whatever that might be, we may infer from Hiuen Tsang's statement that the sale of liquors furnished a source of revenue to the Indian States at this period.

Before leaving the account of Hiuen Tsang, we may notice another extract from his general description of India tending to throw light upon the prevailing system of public expenditure. "Of the royal land," he writes,¹ "there is a fourfold division. One part is for the expenses of government and State worship, one for the endowment of great public servants, one to reward high intellectual eminence, and one for acquiring religious merit by gifts to the various sects."² Now the characteristic feature of ancient Chinese public economy, as we have just observed, was the system of public distribution of land. This evidently implied that the whole territory of the State belonged to the Crown.³ By the term 'royal land' of Hiuen Tsang, then, we have to understand the State territory. Of the four divisions of this territory mentioned by the pilgrim the first, which was meant to provide for 'the expenses of government and State worship,' must have formed by far the most considerable portion, since the land revenue was then, as always, the mainstay of the Indian finance. The second division which related to the 'endowment of great

¹ Watters' tr., *Yuan Chwang*, Vol. I, p. 176.

² As my friend Dr. Prabodh Chandra Bagchi of the Calcutta University informs me, a more literal translation of the last extract would be that 'the fourth part is for assigning religious land for gift to the various sects.'

³ *Of. Chen Huan-Chang*, p. 469. The term 'king's land' actually occurs in a classical quotation made by this writer (*loc. cit.*), which runs as follows: 'Under the wide heaven all is the king's land.'

public servants' no doubt corresponded to the grant of land as remuneration for service to the officials, which is mentioned in the *Arthaśāstra* and in *Manu*.¹ In the same context Hiuen Tsang writes, "The ministers of State and common officials all have their portion of land, and are maintained by the cities assigned to them." The third division of the State territory which was meant 'to reward high intellectual eminence' is paralleled by Kauṭilya's mention of the assignment of land to learned *Brāhmaṇas*.² The technical term for such grants is mentioned in one inscription to be noticed below,³ as *vidyādhana* ('the remuneration for learning'). The evidence of Hiuen Tsang in this respect is curiously corroborated by an indirect reference in I-tsing, his junior contemporary, who visited the seats of Buddhism in Northern India between 673 and 685 A. C. Speaking of the Indian scholars engaged in religious disputations he observes,⁴ "They receive grants of land and are advanced to a high rank." Of the fourth and last division of land mentioned by Hiuen Tsang it is not necessary to mention much, as the large majority of the land-grants commemorated in the Ancient Indian inscriptions are concerned with gifts to various sects.

In the latter half of the 7th century A. C. one of the leading dynasties in North-Eastern India was that of the Later Guptas of Magadha. To this period belongs a land-grant of a ruler of East Bengal called Lokanātha, who was probably a feudatory of the later Guptas. It records the donation of a certain piece of land for the purpose of a temple. The area of the land (which is said to be situated 'in the Subbuṅga district in the forest region having no difference between natural and artificial'), is specified in terms of the current land-measure (*pāṭakas*, *dronas*, *ādhakas*), but no reference is made to a standard unit of measurement. This evidently shows that

¹ Above, pp. 157-158. ² See above, p. 157. ³ Below, p. 242.

⁴ Takakusu, I-tsing's *Record of the Buddhist Religion*, p. 178.

while the waste lands were owned as in the Gupta period by the State, the custom of measuring them according to a fixed standard had been dropped. Later in date than the grant of Lokanātha is the Deo-Baranārka inscription of Jivitagupta II of the Later Gupta dynasty,¹ who seems to have flourished in Magadha early in the eighth century A. C. In the concluding portion of this inscription which records a donation of land in favour of a temple of the Sun, there have been preserved three clauses, *viz.*, 'with the *udraṅga*,' 'with the *uparikara*' and 'with the ten offences,' as well as part of a fourth, *viz.*, 'the five.' Of these we have met with the first three terms during the present or the preceding period. The last term, we suggest, stands for the *pañchāparādha* ('the five offences') mentioned in a Nepal grant of the same period to which we shall presently refer. On the analogy of the ten offences we take it to apply to the right of the donee to the remission of penalties for a conventional list of offences.

We may mention in the present connection a rock inscription of a chief called Udayamāna² belonging to the modern Hazaribagh district of Chota Nagpur. This inscription has been assigned on palaeographical grounds to the eighth century A. C. It introduces us to three merchants, the eldest of whom was Udayamāna, who on their return journey from Tāmralipti to Ayodhyā stopped at a certain village belonging to the king of Magadha. When the king came to a forest near the village apparently for elephant-hunting, he ordered the inhabitants to furnish him with *avalagaka* (otherwise called *avalagana*). The villagers, on hearing this demand, approached Udayamāna who sent the thing required to the king at their request. At this the grateful villagers offered to make Udayamāna their chief, and their choice was approved by the king of Magadha. In the

¹ GI., No. 46.

² Ep. Ind., II, No. 27.

above the term *avalāgaka* or *avalagana* is taken by Kielhorn to mean 'presents' or 'supplies.' If this meaning could be accepted, it would be an instance of miscellaneous contributions from the villagers, of the kind we have already met with in the *Arthaśāstra* and the *Smṛtis*.

In the fifth, sixth and early part of the seventh centuries of the Christian era, the territory of Nepal was ruled by a Lichchhavi dynasty, and thereafter the Thākuri dynasty was founded by the famous Aṁśuvarman. The records of these kings throw some valuable light upon the prevailing revenue system. Thus an inscription of King Śivadeva I of the Lichchhavi dynasty¹ mentions among the privileges granted to a certain village that it should be entered only for collection of the three imposts (*trikara*), and not for the grant of written documents, for the five offences and so forth. With this we may connect an inscription of the same king² requiring the residents of a certain village granted to a Śivite ascetic to pay to the donee the customary contributions in kind (*bhāgabhogakara*) and in cash (*hirāṇya*) as well as all other dues (*pratyāyas*). Here, it will be observed, the branches of revenue specified in connection with the land-grants are of the usual kind, consisting mainly of contributions in kind and in cash.³ Other records of the rulers of Nepal refer to taxes of a more special, if not unique, character. Thus we have one inscription⁴ recording the grant

¹ L., No. IX. The abbreviations used here are L=Sylvain Lévi, *Le Népal*, Vol. III (Inscriptions); Bhagavānlāl=Bhagvānlāl Indrajī and G. Bühler, *Inscriptions from Nepal*, Ind. Ant., IX, p. 163 ff.

² Bhagvānlāl, No. 12.

³ An instance of the contribution in kind is furnished by a record of Aṁśuvarman (L, No. XV) resigning the king's claim to twelve pots of oil and four other articles from a certain village. References to the contribution in cash occur, e.g., in L., No. XXI, enumerating a long list of taxes in *paṇas* and *paṇapurāṇas* that were assigned by a king in favour of the Buddhist order.

⁴ L., No. XI.

of a privilege to a certain village in the shape of a remission of the Malla tax (*mallakara*) above the usual rate of four copper *panas*. Another inscription¹ mentions the following concessions made by the royal donor to a specified village :—

- (a) Remission of half of the tax that is payable per unit in case of combat of cows (?),
- (b) Imposition of eight *panas* instead of one *kārṣāpaṇa* (consisting of sixteen *panas*) and of four *panas* for eight in respect of the tax called *śimhakara*,
- (c) Imposition of four *panas* for the Malla tax.

In a third inscription² recording a royal dedication of a village to a Buddhist establishment the privileges granted to the village concerned are declared to be the following :—

- (a) Exemption from entrance by irregular or regular troops,
- (b) Immunity from all compulsory work in the form of manual labour, and exemption of the householders from all kinds of forced labour (*viṣṭi*) such as being sent to foreign countries,
- (c) In cases of murder of pregnant women and of causing abortion, immunity from all other penalties on payment of one-hundred *panas* only, and in cases of maltreatment of injured beasts of the bovine species, similar immunity on payment of three *panapurāṇas* (a class of coins) only,

¹ L., No. XVI. The above tr. differs in some respects from that of Prof. Lévi.

² L., No. XX.

- (d) In cases of commission of the five offences such as theft, adultery, murder, complicity and so forth the liability of the person alone of the delinquent to be seized by the king's officers.¹

Lastly, we may refer to a clause in the inscription of Śiva-deva above mentioned,² declaring that the authorities should thenceforth take every year from the village concerned only five load-carriers for Tibet service (*bhoṭṭaviṣṭi*). In connection with the group of inscriptions specified above, we may first mention that the Malla impost is found in the records of the Lichchhavi kings during the period when the Mallas disputed with them the possession of the central valley of the kingdom. As Sylvain Lévi has already pointed out,³ it has its exact counterpart in the term *turuṣkadanḍa* found in the land-grants of Govindachandra, king of Kanouj, in the 12th century. It is an ambiguous term, as it may refer to a tax imposed either for payment of tribute to the Mallas, or for preparation against their attack. It was evidently assessed for a lump sum upon the villages. Turning to another point, we may observe that the above records clearly distinguish the different forms of forced labour, one of which (namely, the labour for foreign service), appears to have been exacted at a somewhat reduced rate even from villages granted for pious purposes. The last point that has to be noted in this connection is the reference to the five offences. As we have already noticed, the ancient Indian land-grants frequently contain the clause that the grant is made together with the ten or the five offences, but its precise meaning is left uncertain. The records with which we are now concerned not only help to clear up the mystery, but they also tend to show that the ordinary penalty for commission of the offences apparently amounted to confiscation of the property, as well as seizure of the person, of the delinquent.

¹ With the above cf. the five mortal sins (*mahāpātakas*) mentioned in the *Smṛtis*.

² Bhagavānlāl, No. 9.

³ See Lévi, *Le Népal*, Vol. II, p. 212, and n.; Vol. III, p. 68.

CHAPTER V

THE EARLY MEDIAEVAL ("RĀJPUT") PERIOD.

The paramount dynasty in Northern India during the latter half of the 9th and the early part of the 10th centuries was that of the Gurjara-Pratihāras of Kanouj. King Bhoja (c. 840-890 A.C.) of this dynasty, who transferred his capital to the imperial city from his earlier seat in South Rajputana, annexed a considerable portion of Northern India to his dominions. In the reign of his son and successor Mahendrapāla (c. 890-908 A.C.) the Empire reached the height of its greatness, extending from North Bengal to the peninsula of Kathiawar and from the Himālayas to the Narmadā.

Among the land-grants belonging to the home provinces of the Gurjara-Pratihāra Empire, there are some¹ which merely specify that the land is granted 'with all revenues' (*āyas*), and 'to last as long as the Sun and the Moon etc. shall endure,' while they require the residents of the villages concerned to pay all revenues to the donee. With this may be

mentioned a land-grant of the same dynasty dated $\frac{893 \text{ V.S.}}{836 \text{ A.C.}}$

which records how a feudatory of King Nāgabhaṭa granted an *agrahāra* with his suzerain's approval, and how subsequently the grant was restricted by the legal officers, so that King Bhoja had to renew the grant with the cessation of all revenues, but to the exclusion of lands already given to the temples and the Brāhmaṇas. Of a more special kind is the inscription of

King Mahipāla,² dated $\frac{974 \text{ V.S.}}{918 \text{ A.C.}}$, mentioning his order that

¹ Cf. Ind. Ant., XV, pp. 113 and 141.

² Ep. Ind., XIX, No. 2.

³ Ind. Ant., XVI.

whenever the occasion should arise, 500 *drammas*¹ out of the ancient royal taxes (*maulakarā rājakulasya*) were to be assigned for the benefit of a certain Śivite temple. This points to a class of anciently established royal revenues paid in cash, of which, however, the precise nature is left uncertain.

Another land-grant belonging to the home provinces of the Gurjara-Pratihāra Emperors is that of a feudatory chief of the same lineage called Mathanadeva,² bearing the date $\frac{1016 \text{ V.S.}}{960 \text{ A.C.}}$. In it the donor grants a village³ obtained by him as his own share (*svabhogāvāptah*) in favour of a Śivite temple. In this connection the revenues assigned in favour of the temple are said to consist specifically of the following items:—

- (1) the *udraṅga*, the income from *bhoga* and *mayūṭa*,
- (2) the *bhāga*, the *khalabhikṣā*, the *prasthaka*, the *skandhaka* from all crops,
- (3) the *mārgganaka*, the fines (*danda*) for the ten offences, the 'voluntary' gifts (*dāna*),
- (4) the treasures and deposits, the *aputtrikādhana* and the *naṣṭibharata*.

The same inscriptions mention a list of tolls and taxes assigned by the donor in favour of the temple of Śiva along with one of Gaṇeśa. These consist of the following items:—

- (1) three *viṃśopakās* (i.e., twentieth part of a particular coin) on every sack of agricultural produce brought for sale to the market-place or the custom-house,

¹ A kind of silver coin in vogue in Northern India at this period. It may be traced back to the Greek *drachmae*.

² Ep. Ind., III, No. 36.

³ This village has been located in the modern Alwar State. (*Ibid.*)

- (2) two *pallikās* from every *ghaṭaka-kūpaka* (evidently a measure of capacity) of clarified butter and oil,
- (3) two *viṃśopakās* per mensem on every shop,
- (4) fifty leaves from every *chollikā* (evidently a load-measure) brought from outside the town.¹

The above inscription is important for our purposes in a variety of ways. From the fact that the village assigned by the donor is declared by him to have been obtained as his own share, and that he belonged to the same family as the paramount sovereign, it may be surmised that we have here a concrete instance of the type of monarchies organised on clan lines, afterwards so widely prevalent in Rajputana. In this type of clan-monarchies, as they have been called to distinguish them from the type of single rulerships prevalent elsewhere, the central or at any rate the best part of the kingdom is appropriated by the king, while the outlying portions are assigned to the lesser chiefs of the clan. The characteristic feature of this system is that the king levies the land revenue entirely from his demesne, while the chiefs only contribute aids in time of war and fees on succession.²

Of the sources of revenue mentioned in the foregoing inscription, some are undoubtedly known to earlier times, but other items are met with here for the first time. The *udraṅga*, as well as the fines for the ten offences, are of course familiar heads of revenue. The 'share' (*bhāga*) of all crops apparently stands for the usual grain-share of the king. The

¹ The above follows the expln. of Kielhorn (Ep. Ind., III, *loc. cit.*)

² For the clan-monarchies of Rajputana and their antecedents, see Baden-Powell, *Land-Systems*, Vol. I, p. 250; *ibid*, *Indian Village Community*, p. 196 ff. Of the class of lands granted as remuneration for service and referable to this period, we have an instance in an inscription of King Jayāditya of the region of modern Allahabad, belonging to the beginning of the tenth century A. C. (I. A., XXI, p. 170). It records the gift, by the king's minister to the Goddess Durga, of a village that he obtained through the royal favour.

bhoga, which occurs in other inscriptions as well, has been explained to mean the periodical supplies of fruits, firewood, flowers and the like, which the villagers had to furnish to the king,¹ and the *mayūṭa* is probably a contribution of the same kind. The term *khalabhikṣā*, 'beggings from the threshing-floor,' probably stands for the demand for a portion of the crop, over and above the usual grain-share that was collected from the grain heaped upon the threshing floor.² The *mārggaṇaka*, which may be connected with the expression *mārggaṇa* or a beggar, is apparently a benevolence of a more general character levied upon the villages. The *prasthaka* and the *skandhaka* apparently refer to the contributions at specific rates for every *prastha* measure of liquids, and for every shoulder-load of articles. The *aputtrikādhana* literally means the property of one who has no appointed daughter, that is, 'one who in the absence of sons has not appointed his daughter to raise male issue for himself.' Probably it refers to the king's claim to confiscate the property of all persons who died sonless, to which parallels may be found, as will be shown later on, in the subsequent history of Gujarat.

Another record that may be mentioned in the present connection is the famous Siyadoni inscription belonging to the region of the modern Gwalior State.³ This inscription records the donations of a large number of individuals at various dates ranging from $\frac{960 \text{ V. S.}}{904 \text{ A. C.}}$ to $\frac{1025 \text{ V. S.}}{968-969 \text{ A. C.}}$. During this time the town of Siyadoni was held by princes or nobles bearing the title of Mahārājādhirāja under the suzerainty of the paramount Emperors Bhoja, Mahendrapāla, Mahīpāla and

¹ Cf. Bühler's note in *Ep. Ind.*, I, p. 75 n.

² With this may be compared *khalapunḥi* (vulgo *Rall-poonḥee*), i.e., 'the small heaps of grain taken from each larger pile at the time of measurement' and under Maratha rule considered as a perquisite of the State."—Wilson, *Glossary*, q. v.

³ *Ep. Ind.*, I, No. 21.

Devapāla, while the custom-house (*maṇḍalīkā*) was administered under their direction by a board of five (*pañchakula*).

Turning to the outlying provinces of the Gurjara-Pratihāra Empire, we may first mention a grant of Mahendrapāla II, $\frac{1003 \text{ V.S.}}{946 \text{ A.C.}}$ belonging to the region of modern Malwa.¹ Here a village is granted by the donor with all revenues derived from it, but excluding the *brahmadeya* lands formerly given, while the residents of the village are required to pay the customary contributions in kind (*bhāgabhogakara*) and in cash (*hiranya*) and so forth. Another inscription² records the donation of a village by the provincial governor of Ujjain under the same king. In it the village is assigned with all royal dues such as the contributions in kind and in cash together with the tax per shoulder-load (*skandhaka*), the receipts by begging (*mārggaṇaka*) and so forth.

Two land-grants made by feudatories of Mahendrapāla in the region of Kathiawar bearing the dates $\frac{574 \text{ G.E.}}{898 \text{ A.C.}}$ and $\frac{956 \text{ V.S.}}{899 \text{ A.C.}}$ ³ specify the following privileges assigned in favour of the donee :—

- ‘the contribution in kind’ (*bhāgabhoga*),
- ‘the income from the tax in cash’ (*hiranyadāna*),
- ‘the (immunity from) fines for the ten offences’ (*daṇḍa-daśūparādha*),
- the *udraṅga*, the *uparikara*, the *chollaka* and some other taxes,
- ‘the immunity from entrances by irregular and regular troops,’ and ‘the forced labour as it falls due.’⁴

Of the parts of Northern India not comprised within the limits of the Gurjara-Pratihāra Empire, we may first

¹ Ep. Ind., XIV, No. 13, Part I.

² *Ibid*, Part II.

³ Ep. Ind., IX, No. 1, A and B.

⁴ The last clause is found only in B.

mention two records dated $\frac{776 \text{ Śaka}}{804 \text{ A. C.}}$,¹ belonging to the Kangra district of the Punjab. There we are told that the local chieftain granted two *drammas* per day out of the income of the custom-house (*maṇḍapikā*), while his mother granted one plough of land. This shows that the customs duties used to be collected in cash in the particular region mentioned, while the primitive method of land-measure by means of ploughs was used even in Government transactions.

In connection with the above may be mentioned a land grant of Lalitāsura² belonging to the region of Kumayun and dated on palaeographical grounds about the middle or second half of the 9th century. In it three villages held by one person and two villages held by another are assigned in favour of a temple, and the conditions of the grant are specified as follows:—

- ‘it is to be exempted from (the molestation of) officials,’
- ‘it is not to be entered by irregular or regular troops,’
- ‘it is not in any way to be seized,’
- ‘it is not to be resumed,’
- ‘it is to last as long as the Sun and Moon, etc., shall endure,’
- ‘with the piece taken out from the district,’ and
- ‘no one is to obstruct the donee in its peaceful enjoyment in the line of his descendants.’

It will be observed that the conditions of the grant are of the usual kind coming down from earlier times. Two specific heads of revenue also known to the earlier inscriptions may be inferred from the titles of officers called *śaulkika* (‘toll-collector’), and the *daśāparādhika* (‘the officer entrusted with jurisdiction over the ten offences’).

¹ Ep. Ind., I, No. 16.

² Ind. Ant., XXV, p. 18.

In Gujarat throughout the greater part of the 9th century the great Rāṣtrakūṭa dynasty of the Deccan or its feudatories held sway. In the third quarter of the following century it was held by the Paramāras,¹ but afterwards it passed into the hands of the famous Chālukya dynasty of Anhilwāra. A land grant of a feudatory of the Rāṣtrakūṭa king Govinda III, dated $\frac{735 \text{ Śaka}}{812 \text{ A. C.}}$,² records the gift of a village in a group of twelve villages, and the grant is made 'with the income from the tax in cash,' 'with the (immunity from) penalties for the ten offences' (*daṇḍadaśāparādha*) 'according to the maxim of the uncultivated land.' Another grant made by a king of the Gujarat branch of the Rāṣtrakūṭas, dated $\frac{789 \text{ Śaka}}{867 \text{ A. C.}}$,³ mentions that the land is given 'together with unpaid labour as it falls due,' 'with the income from grain and from the tax in cash,' 'with immunity from entrance by irregular and regular troops,' 'to last as long as the Sun and Moon, etc., shall endure.' Some further grants of kings of the same dynasty bearing the dates $\frac{738 \text{ Śaka}}{816 \text{ A. C.}}$ and $\frac{757 \text{ Śaka}}{835-836 \text{ A. C.}}$ ⁴ go into fuller details. In them the revenues assigned to the donee comprise the following specific items :—

- 'the *udraṅga* and the *uparikara*,'
- 'the (immunity from) penalties for the ten offences,'
- 'the income from the elements, etc. (*bhūtavāta-pratyāya*),' 'the contributions in kind and in cash,'

while other clauses of the grant are of the kind already mentioned in the earlier Gujarat grants. Coming to the main branch

¹ See the evidence of the newly discovered Harsola copper-plates of the Paramāra Siyaka (Ep. Ind., XIX, No. 39).

² Ep. Ind., III, No. 9.

³ *Ibid.*, VI, No. 28.

⁴ Journ. of Bomb. br. of Royal As. Soc., XX, No. 9 ; Ind. Antiq., XIV, p. 196 ff.

of the Rāṣṭrakūṭas, we may mention an inscription of Kṛṣṇa II, dated $\frac{832 \text{ Śaka}}{910-911 \text{ A. C.}}$,¹ which records the grant of a village included in a group of ten villages, which is itself comprised in a group of 84 villages included within a wider group of 750 villages. The revenues specifically assigned in this inscription and another inscription of Govinda IV, dated $\frac{852 \text{ Śaka}}{930 \text{ A. C.}}$,² consist of the following :—

‘the (immunity from) penalties for the ten offences,’
the *udraṅga*, ‘the contribution in kind’ (*bhogabhāga* or *dhānyāya*) and the contribution in cash.

In the above it will be noticed that the clauses of the grant together with the heads of revenue mentioned therein are precisely of the same nature as those of other records of this period in Northern India. A few words may, however, be said regarding the territorial divisions occurring in the inscription of Kṛṣṇa II just mentioned. In so far as its units of 10 and 750 villages are concerned, they may fitly be matched with the nearly identical divisions contemplated in the Arthaśāstra and in Manu.³ On the other hand, the intermediate group of 84 villages is absolutely unknown to the literature of Law and Polity, but it has its exact counterpart in the Rajput type of clan-monarchies in which the normal size of a chief’s territory amounted to this area of land.

The last inscription from the region of Gujarat, which we may mention in this connection, is that of a Surāstra chief of Chāpa lineage (closely allied to that of the Gurjaras), which bears the date $\frac{839 \text{ Śaka}}{917-918 \text{ A. C.}}$.⁴ It records the gift of a village as a

¹ Ep. Ind., I, No. 8.

² *Ibid*, VII, No. 6.

³ See above, pp. 151-152.

⁴ Ind. Ant., XII, pp. 193-194.

fee of learning (*vidyādhana*) to a spiritual preceptor (*āchārya*), and the privileges assigned to the donee include the following items :

the *dāṇī*, 'the contribution in kind' (*bhogabhāga*),
'the (immunity from) penalties for the ten offences.

In the list of officers mentioned in this grant is included the *pañchakulika*, or the officer in charge of the *pañchakula*. This last term which we have already met with in the Siyadoni inscription refers, as we have seen, to officers in charge of the custom-house.

We may consider here two records¹ of King Tivaradeva of the non-Aryan Savara stock belonging to the region of the modern Central Provinces, who flourished about the middle of the 8th century. Both of them mention the grant of lands by the king for pious purposes. In the fuller example² the land is granted for enjoyment as long as the sun, etc., shall endure, 'with immunity from entrance by irregular and regular troops,' 'with treasures and deposits,' 'with the right of receiving the *dāradraṇaka* and all taxes (*karas*),' while the residents are required to pay to the donee the customary grain-share. In the above it is evident that the grant is made on the usual conditions of perpetuity and assignment of all the royal revenues. A new item of revenue is, however, introduced by the term *dāradraṇaka*, which, according to Fleet,³ means either an agricultural cess or a marriage-tax.

The principal dynasties that ruled in Bengal and the adjoining regions during the present period were the following :—

- I. The Pāla dynasty, 8th-12th centuries A. C.
- II. The Khadga dynasty of Eastern Bengal (Samatāta).
It flourished according to one view, in the latter

¹ G I, No. 81 ; Ep. Ind., VII, No. 13.

² G I, No. 81.

³ G. I., p. 299n.

half of the seventh century, and according to another, in the ninth century A.C.

III. The Chandra dynasty of Eastern and Southern Bengal (Harikela and Chandradvīpa), 10th-11th centuries A.C.

IV. The Varman dynasty of the family of Vajravarman, 11th-12th centuries A.C.; the Varman dynasty of the family of Jyotivarman (11th century).

To this list may be added the Mahāmāṇḍalika Īśvara-ghoṣa, evidently a feudatory of one of the later Pāla kings, whose record has been assigned on palaeographical grounds to the first half of the 10th or the second half of the 11th century, and who apparently belonged to the region of Goalpara and Kāmarūpa in Assam.¹

The known grants of the Pāla kings, which are made with regard to whole villages and in favour of Brāhmaṇas or religious foundations, usually mention that the land is granted—

‘with the rent of temporary tenants’ (*uparikara*) ‘with the (immunity from) penalties for the ten offences’ (*daśāparādha* or *daśāpachāra*), ‘with the police-tax,’² ‘with immunity from all burdens,’ ‘with the prohibition of entrance by irregular and regular troops,’ ‘with exemption from all taxes,’ ‘with all revenues due to

¹ For references see R. D. Banerjee, *The Pālas of Bengal* (Mem. of the As. Soc. of Bengal, Vol. IV, No. IV); do. *History of Bengal*, Pt. I (in Bengali); do. *Pāla Chronology* in JBORS, Dec., 1928 (for a thoroughly revised and up-to-date account); R. C. Majumdar, *Early History of Bengal* (Dacca Univ. Bulletin, No. 3). The inscriptions are most conveniently collected in the following publications of the Varendra Research Society :—*Gauḍalekhamālā*, Vol. I, by A. K. Maitra (in Bengali), Rajshahi, 1912; *Inscriptions of Bengal*, Vol. III, by N. G. Majumdar, Rajshahi, 1929.

² *Chauroddharana* in the original. This term is trans. by R. D. Banerjee (Ep. Ind., XIV, No. 23; *ibid*, XV, No. 18; etc.) as ‘with the right of extirpation of robbers.’ With this may be connected the explanation of Vogel who takes it to mean (*Antiquities of the Chamba State*, p. 129) ‘the

the king,' 'according to the maxim of the uncultivable land,' 'to last as long as the Sun and the Moon shall endure.'

In connection with the above the resident cultivators are ordered to pay to the donee the following specific taxes besides others not mentioned :—*kara* and *piṇḍaka* (Ep. Ind., IV, No. 34), *bhāgabhogakara* and *hiranya* (IA, XV, p. 306 ; JASB, LXIII, Pt. I, p. 39 ; JASB, 1900), *kara* and *hiranya* (IA, XXI, p. 256). In some of the above grants (IA, XV; JASB, 1900; Ep. Ind., XIV, No. 23) the *bhāgabhogakara* and *hiranya* are mentioned in the list of revenues assigned in general terms to the donee. To the above one of these grants (JASB, 1900) further adds the item 'with exemption from the king's enjoyment of the three jewels' (*ratnatrayarājasambhogavarjjita*). This term has not yet been properly explained, but it may refer to some kind of royal contribution from the villages in support of the Buddhist faith which, as is well-known, was professed by the Pāla kings. In the above list *kara* is apparently an abbreviation of the more usual *bhāgabhogakara*, which we have taken elsewhere to mean the king's grain-share, or the contribution in kind paid by the villagers. The term *piṇḍaka* is identified by Kielhorn¹ with *bhāgabhogakara*, but it more probably stands

special privilege of persecution of thieves' conferred upon the grantee, corresponding to the *infangtheof* of Old English Law. This interpretation, which is not supported by any independent evidence, must be rejected on the grounds stated in our explanation of the equivalent term *choradaṇḍa*, N. G. Majumdar's trans. of *chauroddharana* (*op. cit.*, p. 8) as 'with police protection' is equally unsatisfactory, not only because such a clause would be quite extraordinary in a land-grant, but because this item is mentioned in a list of oppressions from which the donee is exempted in three copper-plate charters of Kings Ratnapāla and Indrapāla of Prāg-jyotiṣa (below, p. 248). We identify *chauroddharana* with *choradaṇḍa* of the earlier inscriptions, and explain it in the same sense.

¹ Ep. Ind., IV, p. 254n⁷.

for the *hiranya* (or the contribution in cash) of other inscriptions. The *kara* and the *hiranya* are evidently singled out because they were the two most important taxes on the villages.

In the above-mentioned grant of the feudatory chief Īśvaraghoṣa the clauses include the items that the land 'is to be exempted from all burdens,' that it 'is not to be entered by the irregular and regular troops,' that it is 'to be exempted from all taxes,' and that it is 'to last as long as the Sun and the Moon, etc., shall endure.' In the same connection the resident cultivators are ordered to pay to the donee the customary *kara* tax and all other revenues (*pratyāya*).

The Rampal grant of Srichandra¹ made in favour of a Brāhmaṇa contains the clause that the land is granted—

'with mango and jackfruit trees, with betelnut and cocoanut trees,'

'with remission of penalties for the ten offences,'²

'with the police-tax' (*chauroddharaṇa*),

'with the immunity from all burdens,'³

'with the exemption from entrance by irregular and regular troops,'

'with the immunity from all taxes,'

'with all revenues consisting of the king's grain-share and the taxes in cash,'⁴

¹ N. G. Majumdar, *Inscrs. of Bengal*, No. I.

² *Sadaśāparādha*. Majumdar's rendering 'with toleration of ten sins' is apparently suggested by Fleet's trans. (GI, p. 189) which, as we have elsewhere shown, cannot be accepted as correct.

³ *Parihṛtasarvapiḍah*. Majumdar's trans. 'immune from all kinds of forced labour' unnecessarily restricts the sense, since the burdens comprised in this term are shown by the earlier illustrative examples to include many other items of oppression as well.

⁴ *Sarvarājabhogakarahiranyapratyāya* in the original. Majumdar's tr. 'with all the income such as taxes and gold enjoyed by the king' repeats the usual mistaken rendering of *hiranya*.

‘to last as long as the Sun and the Moon shall endure,’
 ‘according to the maxim of the uncultivated land.’

In the land grant of Bhojavarman of the family of Vajravarman above mentioned, the clauses are so very similar to those of the Rampal grant that a separate mention of them is not necessary.

It will appear from the above that the religious grants of the Pālas and their contemporaries continued to be made on the same conditions as before. They were perpetual and hereditary, and were not only revenue-free, but also carried with them the assignment of the royal revenue from the villages. Again, the heads of revenue and the other charges imposed upon the villages would seem to have been the same as in earlier times. They comprise not only the older grain-share (*bhāgabhogakara*), the tax in cash (*hiranya*) and the police-tax, but also the more recent ‘remission of penalties for the ten offences,’ which as we have seen can be traced back in Gujarat to the 7th century. If we may judge from the title of one of the officers mentioned in the grant of Dharmapāla, *viz.*, ‘the officers in charge of the sixth’ (*ṣaṣṭhādhikṛta*), the grain-share used to be levied at the old traditional rate. The mention of two other officers called *śaulkika* and *gaulmika* in most of the Pāla grants points to two well-known sources of revenue coming down from earlier times, *viz.*, the tolls and customs duties.

It may be mentioned in the present connection that although the grants of the Pālas and their contemporary dynasties in Bengal specify the areas of the lands granted in terms of the current land-measure, no reference is made therein to a fixed standard of measurement of the kind prevailing in the Gupta period. On the other hand, the grant of Dharmapāla above-mentioned proves the survival of the official procedure of the Gupta revenue administration, in as much as it mentions how an application (*vijñapti*) was

made to the king for grant of the village concerned, and how the king thereupon made a donation of the same.¹

We may consider in this connection the records of King Kulastambha,² belonging to the region of Orissa, whose date is generally assigned to the 9th century A.C. One of these records the gift of a village yielding 42 silver coins (*rūpya*). We have here a surprising testimony to the prevalence of cash payments of the land-revenue in Orissa at this early period.³

We may fittingly study in the present place the records of the dynasties of Assam dating from the 9th to the 12th centuries of the Christian era. The Tezpur rock inscription of Harjjaravarmadeva,⁴ which has been assigned to the year 510 of the Gupta era corresponding to 829-830 A.C., is in a hopelessly corrupt state of preservation, but it seems to refer to a legal dispute involving a toll-collector. From this we learn at any rate about the prevalence of the familiar system of tolls in Assam at such an early period.

We may next mention a copper-plate grant of King Balavarman of the same dynasty along with two grants of Ratnapāla and one grant of Indrapāla,⁵ both of whom apparently belonged to a different dynasty. These have been approximately assigned the years corresponding to 990, 1010-1050 and 1060 A.C. respectively. The first grant, after specifying the boundaries of the land and the measures of rice it produced,

¹ While on this subject we may mention that two references in the *Rajatarāṅgiṇī* (VI, 254; VII, 1008) point to the existence of a tax for performing funeral rites (*śrāddhakara*) at Gaya during the time of the kings Abhimanyu (958-972 A.C.) and Harṣa (1089-1101 A.C.). Whether this was a tax levied by the ruling authority or a religious cess imposed by the local priests, it is difficult to ascertain, but the probabilities are in favour of the latter alternative.

² JASB, LXIV, Part I, p. 126; Ep. Ind., XII, No. 20.

³ So also the grant of the *Maṇḍaleśvara* Gayāḍa Tuṅgadeva (J.A.S.B., 1908, pp. 347-9) seems to refer to a sum of 45 *rūpyas* yielded by the assigned village.

⁴ JBORS, 1917, p. 508 ff.

⁵ JASB, 1897, 1898.

contains the clause that the land is not to be entered by a number of 'oppressors,' comprising, among others, the queen, the royal princes, the royal favourites, the eunuchs, the persons fastening elephants and mooring boats, the officers tracking thieves as well as the officers charged with the *uparikara* tax and with the *utkhetana* impost. The other three grants contain a clause to the effect that the land is exempted from all 'oppressions,' such as those arising on account of the fastening of elephants and the mooring of boats, the tracking of thieves (*chauroddharana*), the arrest of criminals, the *uparikara* tax, the *utkhetana* impost for various occasions and the grazing of elephants, horses and other animals. In these remarkable inscriptions it will be noticed, in the first place, that the revenue of the land is estimated in measures of rice yielded by it. This evidently points to the general prevalence of payments of the land-revenue in kind. In the next place, the inscriptions furnish a full list of the burdens devolving ordinarily upon agricultural lands, from which pious grants were exempted. Such burdens were concerned not only with the visits of members of the royal family and various royal officers, but also with the grazing of animals, the binding of elephants and the mooring of boats, all apparently belonging to the State service. In connection with the present point it may be noticed that the two grants of Ratnapāla above-mentioned state that the king derived a considerable revenue from copper mines. It therefore follows that the income from mines also formed a branch of the royal revenues in Assam at this time.

The last grant to be mentioned in this connection is that of Vaidyadeva, belonging to the district (*maṇḍala*) of Kāmarūpa in the division (*bhukti*) of Prāgjyotiṣa, which may be assigned to the middle of the 12th century.¹ It contains the clause that the two villages which are granted to a Brāhmaṇa

¹ Ep. Ind., II, No. 28.

are

‘not to be entered by irregular and regular troops,’ ‘to be held according to the maxim of the uncultivated land,’ ‘to be exempted from all revenues,’ ‘to be accompanied with all revenues,’ ‘to be immune from taxes (*kara*) and their appurtenances (*upaskara*),’ and ‘to be enjoyed as long as the Sun and the Moon shall endure.’

It will be noticed that the conditions of the grant as well as the heads of revenue are of the usual kind.

The present seems the fitting occasion for dealing with the large State of Kashmir, which, unlike all other Hindu States of ancient times possesses a connected history of its own going back to a legendary antiquity. From the well-known chronicle of the Kashmirian Kalhana it is possible to piece together a few fragments of the revenue history of the kingdom during ancient times.

The revenue history of Kashmir is traditionally carried back to a great antiquity. If Kalhana is to be believed, already before the reign of Jalauka, the reputed son and successor of Aśoka, there existed a group of seven officials (*prakṛtis*), of whom two, *viz.*, the superintendent in charge of the king's revenues (*dhanādhyakṣa*) and the superintendent in charge of the treasury (*koṣādhyakṣa*), were certainly concerned with revenue administration. King Jalauka, according to the chronicler, created eighteen offices (*karmasthāna*) in accordance with the traditional usage.¹ The next important development of the methods and principles of revenue administration is attributed by Kalhana to Lalitāditya Jayapīḍa (c. 724-760), one of the greatest kings of ancient Kashmir. He is credited² with the establishment of five new offices, of which one, *viz.*, the royal store-house (*mahābhāṇḍāgāra*) was evidently concerned with the collection

¹ Rājat., I, 118-120.

² *Ibid.*, IV, 140 ff.

of the revenue. To the same king Kalhana¹ attributes a famous political testament designed by him specially for the administration of his own kingdom. One of the clauses of this memorable document was that there should not be left with the villagers more food-supply than was required for one year's consumption, and more oxen than were required for the tillage of fields. This extraordinary piece of statecraft is sought to be justified by the plea that if the villagers were to have more wealth, they would become within a single year cruel *Dāmaras* ('feudal chiefs') capable of setting at nought the king's command. The above evidently represents, what indeed is apparent from the reference to the *Dāmaras*, not a genuine historical document, but the personal opinion of the chronicler derived from his painful experience of feudal anarchy and disorder in later times.²

Probably the first authentic fact in the revenue history of Kashmir is the reference to a series of financial exactions perpetrated by the tyrant Śaṅkaravarman (883-902 A.C.). He is credited by Kalhana³ with the establishment of two revenue offices called the office charged with the share of the lord of the market (*aṭṭapatiḥhāga*) and the office concerned with domestic affairs (*gṛhakṛtya*). The first was evidently concerned with the collection of the royal market-dues, which, as we have seen, can be traced back to the Arthaśāstra. The second was placed in charge of one treasurer and five secretaries, both called by Persian titles.⁴ Of the same tyrant we are told that he not only appropriated the proceeds of sales of incense and so forth, but also plundered straightway

¹ *Idem*, IV, 344 ff.

² Cf. Sir Aurel Stein, *Rājat.* tr., *Introd.*, pp. 37-38.

³ *Rājat.*, V, 167.

⁴ These were known respectively as *ganjavara* and *diviras*. Reference to the office of the *gṛhakṛtya* occurs later in the account of the reign of Saṅgrāmarāja (1003-1028 A.C.). *Rājat.*, VII, 42,

sixty-four temples under pretence of exercising supervision, and that he resumed the villages belonging to the temples after paying compensatory allowances (*pratīkara*) to their possessors. Above all Śaṅkaravarman introduced for the first time the well-known system of forced carriages of loads (*rūḍhabhāroḍih*), which Kalhaṇa aptly calls the harbinger of misery to the villagers. An interesting side-light is thrown upon the methods of its exaction by the statement¹ that the tyrant fined the villagers failing to carry the loads for one year the value of the load calculated according to the highest price in the region concerned, and that he fined in the same way all villagers without any fault of their own.²

The next innovation in the sphere of financial administration belongs to the regency of Queen Diddā (950-1003 A.C.). During her time a low-born upstart holding the office of head of the treasury (*gañjādhiḥikārin*) created a new revenue office in connection with his imposition of some new imposts.³ The next important landmark in the revenue history of Kashmir is associated with the reign of Harṣa (1089-1101 A.C.), whom Kalhaṇa aptly calls the Turkish king. To this tyrant is attributed⁴ not only the spoliation of treasures of all temples, but also the wholesale defilement and confiscation of the divine images themselves. To him is also attributed⁵ the creation of a variety of imposts that were charged upon the unfortunate householders. In connection with these financial exactions the tyrant is said⁶ to have created a prefect

¹ Rājat., V, 172-174.

² Reference to this burden is found later on in the reign of Harṣa (Rājat., VII, 1088). Not many decades ago an English writer recorded his opinion that nothing had done more to ruin Kashmir than the corrupt and cruel manipulation of the *corvée*. (See Lawrence, *The Valley of Kashmir*, p. 411.)

³ Rājat., VI, 264-266.

⁴ *Ibid*, VII, 1080 ff.

⁵ *Ibid*, 1101 ff.

⁶ *Ibid*, 1091 ff.

for the overthrow of divine images and another for robbing the properties of the temples and of the villagers, besides others that may not be mentioned. The records of later times, while not specifying any new experiment in financial exactions, serve to illustrate the prevailing forms and methods of revenue collection. Of such a nature is the reference¹ to a fictitious account prepared by a fraudulent merchant who wishes to appropriate to himself a large sum deposited with him by another man. In the course of this statement is mentioned an item relating to payment of a certain sum on account of ferry charges to the depositor. Another reference of the same kind belongs to the reign of Jayasimha (1128-1149 A.C.). There we are told that an unruly chief, after imprisoning the king's officers, collected the customs duties at the military stations (*drāṅga*), and caused his own name to be stamped in red lead on the merchandise, as if he were the king.² The above not only illustrates the use of military stations as custom-houses at this time, but it also points to a specific method of securing payment of tolls by the merchants. With the last may be compared the method of fixing the official seal (*mudrā*) upon imported merchandise that is mentioned in the Arthaśāstra.³

Let us now turn to the history of the ruling houses that arose on the ruins of the Empire of the Gurjara-Pratihāras of Kanauj. One of the earliest dynasties to break away from the yoke of the Gurjara-Pratihāras was that of the Chandels of Jeṣākabhukti (modern Bundelkhand), who asserted their independence in the middle of the tenth century. The Chandels ruled with great splendour till their defeat at the hands of the Turkish chieftain Qutb-ud-din Ībak in 1203 A.C.

Of the land-grants of the Chandel kings, it is noticeable

¹ Rājat., VIII, 136 ff.

² *Ibid.*, 2010.

³ Above, pp. 71-72,

that one bearing the date $\frac{1261V.S}{1205-06A.C.}$ ¹ is called by the title of grant after death (*mṛttiyukā vṛtti*). It is made for the maintenance of a person whose father had been killed in battle with the Muhammadan Turks. This evidently introduces us to a class of alienations of land of a novel character, *viz.*, the alienations in the form of military pensions to the heirs of persons killed in battle.

The actual clauses of the Chandel land-grants are of the usual kind, but a few interesting points may be noted. In a few cases the land is granted together with the assignment of revenues, which in the completer specimens² are said to consist of the contribution in kind (*bhāgabhogakara*), the contribution in cash (*hiranya*) and the receipts from fines (*daṇḍādāya*). In another case³ where only a certain area of land determined by the primitive method of seed-capacity is given away, the grant is made along with immunity from the contributions in kind, in cattle and in cash, as well as from unnamed taxes (*kara*) and tolls (*śulka*). To this is added a clause that the king, the royal servants, the foresters, the irregular troops and the like should renounce their respective dues, and that the donee is not to be obstructed with regard to the gift, mortgage or sale of the land. The above shows that the pious grants of the Chandels were in some cases revenue-free, and in other cases accompanied with assignment of the royal revenues. Moreover, they were held in full ownership by the donees. We further learn that there was a continuation of the familiar heads of revenue from lands and from tolls. The mention of the tax upon cattle is a concrete illustration of an impost well-known to the technical literature. Finally, the specification of the immunities of the grant illustrates the dues which the ordinary

¹ Ep. Ind., XVI, No. 20.

² Ind. Antiq., XVI, p. 201 ff., etc.

³ Ep. Ind., XVI, No. 2.

revenue-paying lands had to contribute in favour of various classes of persons including not only the State officers and the irregular State troops, but also the wild foresters.

Another power that rose into importance on the ruins of the Gurjara-Pratihāra Empire was the Haihaya or Kalachuri dynasty of Chedi (modern Central Provinces). The Haihayas threw off the yoke of the Gurjara-Pratihāras after the middle of the 10th century A.C. They attained considerable importance under two ambitious kings called Gāṅgeyadeva and his son Karnaadeva in the 11th century, but towards its close they practically disappeared from history. Of the land-grants of the Kalachuris the completer specimens¹ contain the clause that the land is granted 'with the mango and *madhuka* trees and the salt mines,' and 'to last as long as the Sun and the Moon shall endure,' while the residents of the assigned villages are required to pay to the donee all the royal dues consisting of the contribution in kind, the contribution in cash, the income from taxes in the shape of receipts from fines (*dandādāyakarotpatti*). A few examples² refer to the grant of a royal due of unknown meaning, called *ardhapuruṣārika*. With the above may be compared the land-grants of the feudatories of the Chedi and Chandel kings,³ which usually contain the clause that the land is granted—

'with the mango and *madhuka* trees and with mines,'

'with treasures and deposits,'

'with taxes (*kara*).'

To this is added, in one or two examples, the clause 'with the produce of the sky (*ākāśotpatti*) and with *kalyāṇadhana*.'

¹ Cf. Ep. Ind., II, No. 23.

² Cf. JASB, VIII, p. 492; *ibid*, XXXI, p. 120. The last named inscription also refers, among other things, to *pravaṇīkarā*, *mārggaṇaka* and *duṣṭasādhyādāyā*. Of these the first two terms are explained elsewhere, while the last is altogether new and of uncertain meaning.

³ Ind. Antiq., XVII, p. 224ff.

Of the sources of revenue specified above, 'the produce of the sky' is met with here for the first time, but we may probably identify it with the *bhūtavāta* of the older inscriptions. Another new term which has not been properly explained up to this time is *kalyāṇadhana*.¹

Another dynasty that rose to power after the downfall of the Gurjara-Pratihāras was that of the Chālukyas of Gujarat with Anhilwāra as their capital. Founded by Mūlarāja in the latter part of the 10th century A.C., the dynasty rose to eminence in later times, and it continued to exist till the middle of the 13th century. The records of the Chālukyas of Gujarat, consisting of inscriptions as well as literary works, throw a valuable light upon the branches of royal revenue and the methods of revenue administration in vogue at this period. Thus, in the first place, one inscription² mentions that a charter for land-grant was written while a certain functionary was in charge of the record department and with the assent of the *pañchakula*. This evidently shows that the officials called by the name of *pañchakula* were concerned with the administration of lands alienated by the State. We shall presently see how the same officers were charged with the transfer of property that lapsed to the king for want of heirs into the royal treasury. Another Chālukya inscription bearing the date $\frac{1232 \text{ V.S.}}{1176 \text{ A.C.}}$ ³ records the gift of a village

¹ We may refer here to a land-grant of another branch of the Kalachuri dynasty in the region of the Gogra and Gandak rivers, which bears the date 1134 V.S. corresponding to 1077 A.C. (Ep. Ind., VII, No. 9). It mentions *inter alia* that the land is granted with all royal revenues consisting of the *bhāgabhogā*, and orders the residents to pay all the royal dues consisting of the *bhāgabhogakara* and the *hiranya*.

² Ind. Antiq., XVIII, p. 113.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 83. Of the same nature is the grant of Trilochanapāla, king of Lāṭadeśa (Southern Gujarat), of a different dynasty, dated 972 Saka (Ind. Antiq., XII, p. 202).

included in a specified group of 42 villages, and mentions that the land is granted with the new *mārggaṇaka* and all other dues, while it requires the resident villagers to pay to the donee the contributions in kind and in cash (*bhāgabhogakara* and *hiranya*) and so forth, as they fall due. In another grant,¹ a village is given with the contributions in kind and in cash, with (immunity from) penalties for ten offences, 'with the new *nidhānas*' and so forth, while the resident villagers are required to pay the proper *dānībhāga* and other dues to the donees. In the above list the new *nidhānas* probably stand for some taxes imposed for the first time at the date of the grant. The term *dānībhāga* which evidently corresponds to the *dānībhogabhāga* of a Surāṣṭra land-grant dated $\frac{839 \text{ Śaka}}{917-918 \text{ A.C.}}$ probably refers to the periodical supplies of fruits, firewood and the like by the villagers. The term *mārggaṇaka*, as we have seen,² occurs in a land-grant of the time of the Gurjara-Pratihāra Emperor Mahendrapāla II, and apparently means a benevolence of a general character levied upon the villages. We have thus to understand by the expression 'new *mārggaṇaka*' of the Chālukya grant that the original imposition of this kind had become permanent, and that an additional levy was made at this time.

In connection with the present point, we may mention that a land-grant of the time of the Chālukya Bhimadeva II³ mentions the gift by an individual of one silver coin (*rūpaka*) every day into the custom-house of the *talapada* land for the purposes of a temple. The clue to the interpretation of the last term is perhaps to be found in the vernacular expression *talpat* used in Gujarat in later times to denote lands fully

¹ Ind. Antiq., Vol. VI, p. 204.

² Above, pp. 235-237.

³ Ind. Antiq., XI, p. 338.

assessed for revenue, as distinguished from estates which were held on condition of service or for a reduced lump assessment.¹ It would, therefore, seem that already at this early period the two classes of lands were distinguished in Gujarat to such an extent that a separate office was created for the fully assessed lands.

A few literary references enable us to discover some further heads of revenue in vogue in Gujarat at least during a part of this period. One of the most famous events in the history of Chālukyas of Gujarat was the conversion of King Kumārapāla (1143-73 A. C.) to Jainism by the celebrated Jaina theologian Hemachandra. One consequence of this conversion, which is attested by a mass of contemporary as well as subsequent evidence, was the king's prohibition of the earlier practice of confiscating the property of persons dying without male heirs.² This practice, evidently, was an extension of the milder rule of the Smṛtis permitting the lapse of property to the Crown in the event of failure of all heirs. An interesting side-light is thrown upon the method of transferring the property of the deceased persons into the king's treasury by a reference in the *Mohaparājaya*,³ the nearly contemporary drama composed by the poet Yaśaḥpāla. There we are told that when a subject died sonless, his friends could not enter his house, and even his body could not be removed till his whole property was removed to the king's treasury. For this last purpose the king used to appoint a *pañchakula*

¹ Baden-Powell, *Land Systems*, Vol. III, p. 278 ; cf. Forbes, *Rās Māla*, p. 564.

² For references cf. specially the three contemporary or nearly contemporary authorities, viz., the *Kumārapālacharitam* of Hemachandra, the *Mohaparājaya* of Yaśaḥpāla (specially pp. 66-67) and the *Kumārapāla-pratibodha* of Somaprabhācāryya (p. 114). For references in later authorities cf. Merutuṅga's *Prabandhachintāmaṇi*. Tawney's tr., p. 133.

³ *Ibid*, pp. 52-53, 57.

(a class of officials already mentioned), in whose presence all the possessions of the deceased were brought to light.

Another source of revenue of the Chālukya kings is hinted at likewise in the *Mohaparājaya*,¹ where we are told that Kumārapāla abolished gambling and drinking (here personified as *dramatis personae* of the play), notwithstanding that they brought great wealth into the royal treasury. The prohibition of gambling by the king is also attested by the contemporary *Kumārāpālapratiḥodha*.² We may also mention in this connexion that an earlier king called Bhuvanapāla is attested by well-established tradition³ to have abolished the tax on Jaina pilgrims, while a less authentic tradition⁴ credits Jayasīṃha Siddharāja, the immediate predecessor of Kumārapāla, with the expulsion of seven great evils including the compulsory contribution called *daṇḍ*.

Some further light is thrown upon the methods of Chālukya revenue administration and territorial divisions by the authorities above mentioned. Thus in one inscription⁵ recording a series of pious constructions by a Śivite ascetic, a whole *pañchakula* is mentioned as performing the work of the record and other departments. As in the Siyadoni inscription of the time of the Gurjara-Pratihāra Emperors, only one member of the *pañchakula* is mentioned in these records by name. From this it follows that we have here to deal with a class of officials charged with functions relating to the land-revenue. The reference in the *Mohaparājaya* just mentioned shows that the *pañchakula* is further charged with the task of appropriating the property of sonless persons at their death into the royal treasury.⁶

¹ *Ibid*, p. 110.

² *Ibid*, pp. 76-77.

³ See Peterson's *Fourth Report of operations in search of Sanskrit MSS.*, J.B.R.A.S., 1894, p. 8.

⁴ Quoted by Tod, *History of Rājasthān*, ed. W. Crooke, pp. 1159-60.

⁵ *Ind. Antiq.*, XI, p. 221.

⁶ A Jaina text quoted in the *Abhidhānārājendra*, the great Jaina

The last point to be noted in the present connection is that one of the Chālukya inscriptions already referred to, which is dated $\frac{1292 \text{ V.S.}}{1175 \text{ A.C.}}$,¹ mentions the assigned village to be included in a specified group of 42 villages, which is itself comprised in a larger territorial division called *pathaka*. As we have already observed, the analogy of later times justifies us in holding that the unit of 84 villages and its sub-divisions, such as we find here, are probably survivals of chiefs' allotments in a system of clan-monarchies. We have thus in the present case an additional instance of the type of monarchical organisation afterwards so widely prevalent in Rajputana.

We may pause here to notice the records of a much less important dynasty that arose on the ruins of the Gurjara-Pratihāra Empire, *viz.*, the Kachchhapaghātas of Gwalior. The record of Vikramasimha of this dynasty, dated $\frac{1145 \text{ V.S.}}{1088 \text{ A.C.}}$,² mentions a certain town as belonging to the king, and its principal object seems to be the assignment in favour of a Jaina temple of a number of gifts including one *vimśopakā* (*i.e.*, the 20th part of a coin) on each cow in a specified village. The former statement evidently points to the type of proprietary villages, of which we have found earlier examples in the Siyadoni inscription above mentioned. The latter recalls the list of market-dues mentioned in the land-grant of Mathanadeva of Gurjara-Pratihāra lineage that has been already dealt with.³

We shall now turn to the illustrious house of the Paramāras of Malwa, which is associated with so many famous

lexicon (s. v. *kara*), mentions a kind of tax relating to the partaking of meals (*bollagakara*). This is explained by the commentator to be concerned principally with the *pañchakulas* and so forth in the villages.

¹ Ind. Antiq., XVIII, p. 83.

² Ep. Ind., II, No. 18.

³ See above, pp. 235-236.

names in the history of Sanskrit literature. Founded early in the 9th century of the Christian era, it rapidly rose into importance, and it flourished till about the middle of the 11th century. The records of the Paramāras, on the whole, point to the same methods of territorial division and forms of revenue as those prevailing in the neighbouring States at the time. Thus an inscription of Vākpatirāja, dated $\frac{1036 \text{ V.S.}}{980 \text{ A.C.}}$,¹ records the king's grant of a village belonging to the group of 12, while another inscription of $\frac{1112 \text{ V.S.}}{1055-56 \text{ A.C.}}$ ² mentions the grant of a village comprised in a group of 42 villages, which is itself included in a district (*maṇḍala*). In these units of 84 villages and their sub-divisions, as we have repeatedly observed, may be detected the survivals of allotments assigned to the chiefs in the Rajput system of clan-monarchies.³ It is also possible to regard the entire unit of 84 villages as the fore-runner of the *paraganā* division of later times.

In the above-mentioned inscription of Vākpatirāja it is stated that the assigned village is held by a certain *mahāsā-dhanika* (evidently a State official), and that the king granted it at the request of his wife. This is probably an instance of a village held as remuneration for service by a State official, and not one held by an individual chief on the condition of rendering general obedience to the king. The Paramāra grants usually contain the clause that the land is granted with the tax in cash and in kind, with the *uparikara* and with all the royal dues (*ādāya*), and that it is to last as long as the Sun and the Moon, etc., shall endure, while the resident cultivators are required to pay to the donee the *bhāgabhogakara*, *hiranya*

¹ Ind. Antiq.- XIV, p. 160.

² Ep. Ind., III, No. 7.

³ Another Paramāra inscription of $\frac{1256 \text{ V.S.}}{1200 \text{ A.C.}}$, however, mentions the grant of a village comprised in a group of 48 villages.

and so forth or else *kara*, *hiranya*, *bhāgabhogā*, etc. In the list of privileges assigned to the donee one inscription has *upaskara* in place of the usual *uparikara*, while another adds the mysterious item *kalyāṇadhana*.¹

It will be noticed that nearly all the conditions of grant and heads of revenue mentioned above are well known to earlier times. A special interest, however, attaches to a record of another branch of the Paramāras ruling in the region of Mount Abu. An inscription of King Somasimhadeva of this dynasty, dated $\frac{1287 \text{ V.S.}^2}{1230 \text{ A.C.}}$, mentions that the king remitted the tax upon the Brāhmaṇas. This remarkable record conclusively proves that notwithstanding the most solemn injunctions of the Law-Books to the contrary, the Brāhmaṇas had been made liable to taxation in the region of Rajputana before this time.

We shall now consider the records of the Gaharwār dynasty which succeeded the Gurjara-Pratihāras on the throne of Kanouj about 1090 A.C. and ruled with success for nearly a century, but were afterwards swept away by the arms of Islam. The land-grants of these kings, which have fortunately been preserved in large numbers, point to some remarkable developments of the traditional revenue system. These grants usually contain the clause that the land is granted 'with the mango and *madhuka* trees,' 'with the metal and salt mines,' 'with the (immunity from) penalties for the ten offences.' Moreover the residents are required to pay to the donees sundry taxes comprising, according to the most frequent enumeration,³ three items, *viz.*, *bhāgabhogakara*, *pravaṇikara*,

¹ JASB, V, p. 379; Ind. Antiq., XVI, p. 254.

² Ep. Ind., VIII, 21, No. 1.

³ Ep. Ind., II, No. 29; *ibid*, IV, No. 11; *ibid*, VII, No. 11; *ibid*, VIII, No. 14 BCD; *ibid*, X, No. 23; *ibid*, XI, No. 3. *Ibid*, XIII, Nos. 20, 26; *ibid*, XIV, 15; Ind. Antiq., XIV; JASB, LVII, pp. 116, 120.

and *турушkadāṇḍa*. Other taxes mentioned more rarely in the same connection are the following :—

1. *kumār agadiāṇaka*,¹
2. *kūṭaka*,²
3. *hiranya*,³
4. *gokara, jalakara, lavanākara, parṇākara*,⁴
5. *yamalikāmbali*,⁵
6. *viṣayādāna*,⁶
7. *dasabamdhaviṣatiathūprastha, akṣapatalaprastha, pratihāraprastha*,⁷
8. *dā-(or di-)gapasadīdirghagovicha*,⁸
9. *valadī*.⁹

A comparison of the above with the land-grants of contemporary and earlier dynasties shows that while a few of the older heads of revenue may be traced in the present list, most are altogether new. Among the familiar items may be mentioned the 'penalties for the ten offences' as well as the contributions in kind and in cash. The last-named item, however, is apparently not now of much account, to judge from the paucity of references to it. With the items of revenue ending in *prastha* may be compared the *prasthaka* in the land-grant of Mathanadeva mentioned above.¹⁰ They evidently stand for contributions of so much per *prastha* (a well-known liquid

¹ Ind. Antiq., XV; Ep. Ind., IV, Nos. D, F, L, N, R; *ibid*, VIII, No. 14 C.

² Ind. Antiq., XIV; Ep. Ind., IV, No. 11 A, C, J; *ibid*, II, No. 29(I).

³ Ep. Ind., IV, No. 11 K, M, R; *ibid*, VIII, No. 14.

⁴ Ind. Antiq., XV; Ep. Ind., IV, No. 11 O; *ibid*, VIII, No. 14 D; *ibid*, X, No. 23; *ibid*, XIII, No. 20.

⁵ Ep. Ind., IV, No. 11 U.

⁶ *Ibid*, XIV, No. 15.

⁷ Ind. Antiq., 103; Ep. Ind., II, No. 29(1).

⁸ Ep. Ind., X, No. 23.

⁹ Ind. Antiq., XVIII, p. 17.

¹⁰ Above, pp. 235-237.

measure) payable by the villagers on account of the offices concerned. The tax on cattle may be identified with the well-known branch of revenue called under this name in the technical literature. The other items of revenue mentioned above are mostly met with here for the first time. Such, *e.g.*, is the tax on *pravani*s, a term probably meaning some class of merchants.¹ It may be taken to be analogous to the *śulka* or toll so very familiar to the technical literature and inscriptions. As to the term *turuṣkadanḍa*, it has been interpreted by some² to mean the tax levied to meet the cost of resisting the Turkish invaders, and by others³ as the tax imposed upon resident Moslem Turks, 'a Hindu Jizya.' The former interpretation seems on the whole to be more likely, although evidence is not lacking as to the existence of a Moslem population in the territory of Benares before its conquest by the arms of Islam.⁴ Of the other items of revenue occurring in the foregoing list, it is not possible at present to offer a satisfactory explanation.⁵

¹ *Pravani* is taken in the sense of 'a retail dealer or perhaps a second-hand dealer' by Prof. Leumann, who derives it from *pra* and *vaniḥ* (see Ep. Ind., III, Additions and Corrections, VIII), but this explanation fails to account for the loss of the final consonant. The *pravani* at any rate is mentioned after the merchant (*vaniḥ*) in a list of persons belonging to the assigned village in the land-grant of Mathanadeva above-mentioned (Ep. Ind., III, No. 36), while a grant of the Somavamśi kings of Trikalīṅga (Ep. Ind., XI, No. 14) mentions the *pravani*kara and the tax on fields (*kṣetrakara*) to have been assigned by a chief in favour of the donee.

² Cf. Vincent Smith, *Early Hist. of India*, 4th ed., p. 400 n.

³ Cf. Sten Konow in Ep. Ind., IX, p. 321.

⁴ Cf. Ibn Athir's *Kāmilut-Tawārīkh* (quoted, Elliot, *History of India*, Vol. II, p. 251): "There were Mussulmans in that country since the days of Mahmud bin Ṣabuktigīn, who continued faithful to the law of Islam, and constant in prayer and good work."

⁵ May we connect *kumāra-gadiāṇaka* with *gadyāṇa*, a class of coins well-known in South India in ancient times?

It would seem from the above that the period of the Gaharwār kings was marked by some remarkable changes in the prevailing revenue system. The mere introduction of a number of new imposts is not of much account, as they might conceivably stand for older taxes under new names. What is of particular significance is that some of the older taxes like the tax in cash had now apparently lost their importance, while other taxes for which no parallels existed in earlier times had come into prominence. A pre-eminent example of this latter kind is the tax relating to the Turks which is almost unique in the history of North Indian dynasties, its only parallel being the 'Malla tax' of some Nepal inscriptions mentioned before.¹

Let us conclude this survey of the revenue systems of the Northern Indian dynasties with an account of the arrangements of the Sena dynasty that ruled Bengal from the early part of the twelfth century almost to its end, when it was reduced to an insignificant position by the Moslem advance. The records of the Senas describing their donations of lands usually contain the clause that the land is given—

- 'with toleration for ten offences' (*sahyadaśāparādha*),
- 'with the immunity from all burdens,'
- 'with the exemption from all revenues,'
- 'with all royal dues in kind and in cash as well as other revenues,'²
- 'to last as long as the Sun and the Moon shall endure,'
- 'according to the maxim of the uncultivated land.'³

¹ Above, pp. 232-233.

² *Samasta-rājabhogakara-hiranya-pratyāya* in the original. The variant form is *rājabhogyakara*° (Majumdar, No. VII).

³ The later Sena grants (Majumdar, Nos. XIII and XIV) omit the clause 'with toleration for ten offences,' and add another, 'to be enjoyed peacefully by the donee in the line of his sons, grandsons and so forth.'

While the above shows that the religious grants of the Senas continued to be made on the usual conditions, other items of these records point to certain novel features. We thus find that the extent of the land granted is specified in the current land-measure (often with minute detail¹) according to standard units of length. In the Barrackpur grant of Vijayasena,² for example, the land is said to be measured according to the reed (*nala*) measure prevailing in Samatāṭa (Eastern Bengal and the Ganges delta). In the Naihāṭi grant of Ballālasena and the Ānullia grant of Lakṣmaṇasena,³ it is measured according to the reed measure of King Vijayasena. In the Tarpaṇadīghi grant of Lakṣmaṇasena⁴ the land granted by the king was measured according to the *nala* used in the Varendrī region (North Bengal) where it was situated. The Govindapur grant of Lakṣmaṇasena⁵ similarly mentions that the land forming the subject of the donation was measured according to the *nala* of 56 cubits prevailing in the region of Vardhamānabhukti where it was situated.

It may be surmised from the foregoing references that there was a general system of land survey and measurement in vogue in Bengal under the Senas.⁶ Other references in the Sena land-grants point to the system of assessment of the land revenue in cash. Thus we find in connection with the Sena grants that the sums of money derived from the

¹ Cf. 7 *bhūpāṭakas*, 9 *droṇas*, 1 *āḍhaka*, 40 *unmānas* and 3 *kākas* in Majumdar, No. VII; fractions of *unmānas* and *kākinīs* in Majumdar No. XV and App. 5.

² Majumdar, No. VI.

³ *Ibid.*, Nos. VII and VIII.

⁴ *Ibid.*, No. X.

⁵ *Ibid.*, No. IX.

⁶ The system was continued in later times under the Gaṅga dynasty of Orissa. An inscription of Nṛsimhadeva II, dated $\frac{1217 \text{ Saka}}{1295 \text{ A.C.}}$ (J A S B, LXV, Part I, pp. 255-256), records a grant of lands in several villages, measured according to the reed-standard of Sivadāsa or Chandradāsa (?).

lands are specified in each case in terms of the current silver coins, viz., *kaparddakapurāṇas* and *purāṇas*.¹ The further references² in some of the records prove conclusively that these sums of money stood for the annual cash assessment of the villages or lands concerned. A still further reference in one of the inscriptions,³ pointing to the rate of cash assessment for a specific land-measure and the total revenue from the village calculated according to this rate, proves that what may be called standard rates of land assessment were known in Bengal at this time.

In connection with the present point it may be remarked that one of the latest of the Sena grants, which was discovered in 1925,⁴ mentions in the course of its description of the various plots granted by the king, the income derived from betel-leaf plantations (*barajas*) and the price of betelnuts. This may be regarded as sufficient evidence of the fact that

¹ For the difficult term *kaparddakapurāṇa* Prof. D. R. Bhandarkar (*Ancient Indian Numismatics*, p. 139) suggests the meaning ' *purāṇa* which is shaped like a *kaparddaka* or *cowrie*.' Majumdar finds a reference to another class of coins called *drammas* in the Edilpur grant of Keśavasena (*ibid.*, No. XIII), but his statement is not borne out by this record.

² Cf. *pratyavdam* (Majumdar, No. VII) and *saṃvatsareṇa* (*ibid.*, Nos. VIII, X, XI, App. No. 5).

³ Majumdar, No. IX, refers to the rule of return of 15 *purāṇas* for each *droṇa*, and gives the total income from a village consisting of 60 *droṇas* and 17 *unmānas* at this rate as 900 *purāṇas*. Similarly an unpublished grant of Daśarathadeva, identified with Rājā Danuja Rai of Sonargaon in East Bengal (of the time of the Emperor Balban, 1266-1286 A. C.) mentions that the income of the land granted amounted to nearly 500 *purāṇas*. On the other hand, the Chittagong grant of Dāmodara, belonging to the year 1243 A.C., mentions the extent of the land granted, but not the revenue derived from it. (Majumdar, No. XVII, and App. 9.) Under the Gaṅga dynasty of Orissa the cash assessment of the land revenue was well-known. Thus an inscription of Nṛsimhadeva IV (JASB, LXIV, Part I, p. 128 ff.) records the grant of villages priced at 900 and 449 *māḍhas* of gold.

⁴ Majumdar, No. XV, and App. 8.

under the later Senas the State derived a revenue from betelnut as well as betel-leaf plantations.

An interesting side-light is thrown upon the official procedure of the Sena administration in respect of the land-grants by the concluding words of the above inscriptions. There we are told not only how officials and other persons were appointed messengers (*dūtaka*) for the execution of the grants, but that the charters had to be endorsed by the office of the king, the minister of peace and war (*mahāsāndhivigrahika*) and sometimes also an official called the *mahāmahattaka*.¹

¹ See *ibid.* Nos. VI, VII, VIII, X, XIII and XIV. I follow Majumdar's interpretation of the abbreviated expressions in the original.

PART IV
SUMMARY AND CONCLUSION



MATERIALS FOR STUDY

At the close of the preceding survey of the Hindu revenue system, as reflected in the theoretical works on Law and Polity and the historical records of States, it remains for us to sum up its leading characteristics and tendencies, and interpret them in the light of other systems both of indigenous and of foreign origin. It will be observed from a careful consideration of the foregoing pages that the available material in this case, though not as complete as could be desired, is far from being negligible either in the duration of time that it spans or the space that it covers or even the variety of its forms. In the oldest recorded period of Indian history, that of the Vedic Saṁhitās and the Brāhmaṇas, we can already discover the beginnings of a true system of public revenues, involving the payment of compulsory contributions by the subjects and the rudiments of a revenue organisation. With the literature of the Arthaśāstra and the aphoristic Smṛtis we enter upon the phase of conscious speculation into the various branches of State income and the methods and principles of their application. This phase is continued, though not in an unbroken chain, through the metrical Smṛtis, the Epics and the Purāṇas, the Nīti treatises and the commentaries on the Smṛtis far down into the mediæval period. Meanwhile the historical data relating at any rate to the North-Indian States and dynasties tend to become available from the Maurya period onwards, and we are enabled with their help to reconstruct, at least in a general outline, the revenue history of Northern India from the third century B.C. down to the close of the twelfth century after Christ.

A general consideration of the outstanding features of the Hindu revenue system, such as we have attempted to set forth above, tends to show that the system, so far from being slight and primitive,¹ may claim to have surpassed the achievements of classical antiquity as well as mediæval Europe, and even anticipated some of the characteristics of modern finance. With its purely primitive stage, that of patrimonial organisation, which appears to have coincided with the period of the Vedic Samhitās and the Brāhmaṇas, we need have little or no concern. It is in the completed system, such as we find reflected in the Arthaśāstra and far less fully in the Smṛtis and illustrated by the notices in the historical records, that we have to look for those characteristics which should be taken into account in forming a true estimate of its nature. Foremost among these characteristics is the fact that the receipts from sources corresponding to the royal domain of European countries in earlier times were of altogether minor fiscal significance. For the rest, direct taxes, instead of being regarded as an exception, contributed along with indirect taxation and what are called the economic receipts of the king, to the sum total of the normal revenues of the State. Of the forms of direct taxation, again, the poll-tax and the general property tax,

¹ For some typical views about the revenue systems of India in particular and the East in general, cf. the following:—“ [The] attempt to fix a just fraction of the annual produce to be paid as tithe or tax, is almost the only contribution to a theory of taxation that the ancient religious laws afford ” (Robert Jones, *The Nature and First Principle of Taxation*, London, 1914, p. 48). “ Financial organisation made its earliest appearance in the great Eastern monarchies....But no Eastern State advanced beyond the condition generally characterised as patrimonial organisation, i.e., an organisation on the model of the household. The part played by money economy was small and it is noticeable that the revenues were collected by the monarch's servants, the farming out of taxes being completely unknown ” (*Encycl. Britannica*, 11th edn., s.v. Finance).

"the two great categories of receipts in early times,"¹ were almost conspicuous by their absence. The revenues, instead of being farmed out to the contractors, were contemplated as a rule to be collected by State officers receiving regular salaries for their services. We may, then, conclude that whatever might have been the case with other countries of ancient as well as mediæval times, the modern system of taxation was not unknown to Ancient India.²

Not only in the variety of its items of taxation, but also in its whole treatment of the topics bearing upon public finance and its elaboration of principles connected therewith, does the Indian system show the evidence of a relatively advanced stage of development. The Indian teachers and schools of the Arthasāstra, anticipating the German Cameralistic writers of the 17th and 18th centuries, sought to inculcate the lessons for "maintenance, increase and expenditure of the prince's income," and so largely did the concept of the State treasure loom in their eyes that it fixed itself in the fundamental categories of their thought such as those of 'the seven limbs' and 'the three powers.'³ In the Smṛtis we have a striking anticipation of the so-called fee-theory of taxation which was fashionable in Europe in the 17th and 18th centuries, together with its basic conception of

¹ Bastable, *Public Finance*, p. 465.

² On the absence of a true system of taxation in early times cf. the following :—"Taxation, as we now use the term, as a self-controlled and periodic contribution exacted from the citizen for the support of the State, was then [*i.e.*, in classical antiquity] practically non-existent" (W. M. Daniels, *The Elements of Public Finance*, New York, 1904, p. 15.) "The present ideas regarding taxation are so essentially modern that little or no recognition of them can be found in either ancient or mediæval history. In fact, no taxes, in the present ordinary sense of the term, were needed in ancient times to carry on government or public institutions" (D. A. Wells, *The Theory and Practice of Taxation*, New York, 1911, pp. 74-75).

³ See above, pp. 15-16.

an original contract between the ruler and his subjects.¹ Above all the empirical rules of taxation such as we meet with in the *Manusmṛti* and the *Mahābhārata* are not only based upon sound financial principles regarding the relation of national wealth to the public revenues, but they also involve maxims recalling some of those that have been made famous by Adam Smith and Sismondi.²

The truth is that the structure of the Indian social and political organisation and the concepts connected therewith were remarkably free from those defects that prevented the evolution of a true system of public finance among other peoples of antiquity.³ Agriculture and industry, to begin with, instead of being regarded as unworthy of the freeman, formed in India the lawful occupation of the *Vaiśyas* who were included in the list of upper classes of the Hindu social system. However much fighting and conquest might be enjoined upon the *Kṣatriya*, his principal duty was declared to be the protection of his subjects. With this agrees the fact that the testimony of the foreign observers usually gives us the picture of a happy and numerous agricultural population. Among the recognised sources of revenue in the technical literature, and no doubt in actual practice as well, tribute seems to have played an altogether insignificant part in the public economy. Finally, the king representing the State in his own person was not conceived to be omnipotent, but was himself ruled by the Sacred Law which claimed to fix his principal duties and in particular to lay down the heads of revenue together with the rates leviable under each item during normal times.

¹ Above, pp. 17-18.

² *Ibid*, pp. 19-22.

³ For the absence of a proper system of public finance among the Greeks and the Romans and the reasons thereof, see Bastable, *Public Finance*, 3rd ed., pp. 17-18; Daniels, pp. 12-15; Wells, pp. 95-96; Lutz, *Public Finance*, pp. 12-15.

From this general survey of the ancient Indian scheme of State revenues, let us turn to a consideration of its principal items. Beginning with the branch of land-revenue, we have to observe that judging from the evidence of the foregoing pages it must have reached in its advanced phases a remarkably high level.¹ Thus, in the first place, the principal branch of land-revenue consisting of the king's grain-share is fixed implicitly in the Arthaśāstra, and expressly in the majority of the Smṛtis, not at a uniform rate, but at different rates evidently corresponding to different degrees of fertility of the soil.² The Śukranīti not only mentions in the clearest terms different rates for different classes of soils, but it also refers to the net out-turn of crops as the standard of assessment of the land-revenue.³ The same evidence of an improved system is indicated by the process of land-revenue assessment mentioned in the ancient records. The Arthaśāstra contemplates an elaborate survey of the village lands under specified officers accompanied with the preparation of comprehensive registers and census lists by them.⁴ This bears a striking analogy to the system of cadastral survey in vogue in France and other countries, and that of land-revenue settlement prevailing in British India in modern times. We have also found from references in the general literature and specially in the land-grants how a system of land-survey based on the current standards of measurement

¹ The usual view prevailing till lately with regard to the nature of the Indian land-revenue system before Akbar's time is well illustrated by the following authoritative quotation:—"In its primitive form the land-revenue was that portion of the cultivator's grain-heap which the state annexed for public use, and this crude method of realising the bulk of the State income appears to have been practically the only method in force throughout the greater part of India until the 16th century of our era" (*Imperial Gazetteer of India*, new edition, 1901, Vol. IV, p. 266). A truer, if very general, account of the Hindu system occurs in the preliminary chapter of W. H. Moreland, *The Agrarian System of Moslem India*, Cambridge, 1929.

² Above, pp. 33-58.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 66.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 48 ff.

was in vogue in various parts of Northern India during the pre-Muhammadan period.¹

While on this point we may notice one characteristic of the Indian land-revenue system in ancient times anticipating what was destined to be its peculiar feature during the Middle Ages and far down into the days of the East India Company. In the classified list of the Arthaśāstra and the vaguer account of the Smṛtis the king's share of the produce is sought to be supplemented by various contributions of the nature of cesses.² References in the inscriptions point to the prevalence of this evil system at different times onwards from the third century B.C. in different parts of the country.³ It is needless to point out the remarkable analogy which this system bears to the division of the land-revenue into *asal* and *abwab* in Mughal times and later. Sometimes the ancient cesses like the Mughal *abwabs* of later times assumed so much of a permanent character that when an increased revenue was called for, new cesses were added under the same names to make up the excess.⁴

The above evidently points to the Arthaśāstra system as marking the standard which was imperfectly sought to be realised by the later authorities. The records of subsequent times, however, furnish indisputable evidence of development at least in two important directions.⁵ We have to mention, firstly, the rise of monarchies organised on clan-lines in place

¹ Above, pp. 53-55, 171-173, 198-199, 262, etc.

² See above, pp. 36-38, 64-65.

³ *Ibid*, pp. 170-171, 173.

⁴ *Ibid*, p. 256.

⁵ This point is overlooked by Bernhard Breloer, who observes of the Maurya Empire (*Kauṭaliya-Studien* I, p. 113):—"Es stellt in der Indischen Geschichte einen Höhepunkt dar, wie er kaum wieder erreicht worden ist. Für alle späteren Fürstengeschlechter gab der Staat und der Glanz der Mauryas das unerreichte Vorbild ab."

of the older personal monarchies.¹ The characteristic feature of this new type of polity, as we have shown elsewhere, was that the king occupying the central part of the kingdom levied the land-revenue entirely from his demesne, while the chiefs to whom were assigned the outlying portions contributed aids and fines alone to the royal exchequer. The second line of development is connected with the general substitution of cash payments of the land-revenue for the older payments in kind in certain parts of the country. Contributions in cash for certain special crops are mentioned side by side with the ordinary contributions in kind not only in the technical literature, but also from time to time in the historical inscriptions. But as yet cash payments appear to have been of an altogether exceptional character.² With the 9th century, however, we are introduced to wholesale assessment of villages in cash in certain parts of Eastern India.³ The climax of this change appears to have been reached in Bengal under the rulers of the Sena dynasty in the twelfth century after Christ.⁴

A word may be said in the present place regarding the general consequences of the ancient Indian land-revenues. It has been sometimes maintained⁵ that the land-revenue

¹ See above, pp. 235-236, 240-241, 256, 260.

² Thus, not only is the cash contribution ignored in the classified list of revenues in the Arthaśāstra, but the Smṛtis fix for it the surprisingly low rate of $\frac{1}{50}$. Equally significant is the fact that it altogether escaped the notice of Hiuen Tsang, not to speak of the earlier foreign observers.

³ See above, p. 247.

⁴ *Ibid.*, pp. 265-266.

⁵ Cf. Vincent Smith, *Oxford History of India*, pp. 90-91:—"Most native Indian Governments including those of the Muhammadan dynasties have taken in the shape of land-revenue and cesses so large a proportion of the produce that the actual cultivator was left at most a bare subsistence. The Government's share, it is true, was always limited theoretically, but in practice the State usually took all it could extort. In these circumstances no room was left for economic rent or for a landlord class

charges and cesses imposed by the ancient as well as mediæval governments were in practice so heavy as to leave the cultivator a bare margin for subsistence. In so far as the ancient period is concerned, there is little, if any, positive evidence in favour of this statement. While it is probable that the government proportion of the agricultural produce in the Maurya Empire was $\frac{1}{4}$, it is expressly declared to be $\frac{1}{6}$ for the seventh century by the valuable testimony of Hiuen Tsang.¹ The nearest approach to the system of State rack-renting is found in the body of maxims attributed by the Kashmirian Kalhana to the king Lalitāditya, but the chronicler's authentic records of financial exactions by the rulers of his country in later times contain not a single example of oppressive enhancement of the burden of land-revenue. On the other hand, the analogy of later times combined with the general policy of the law-books and the Niti treatises leads us to infer that the ancient Indian rulers like their successors were in general too much alive to their own interest to press the burdens upon the cultivators to the breaking-point.²

Before leaving the subject of land-revenue, we may make

receiving rent....The nominal percentage of land-revenue to the produce did not much matter, because the Government usually made up for any deficiency by exacting a multitude of extra periodical cesses, not to speak of occasional forced contributions."

¹ See above, p. 225.

² Cf. in this connection the pertinent remarks of Baden-Powell, an eminent authority on Indian land-systems:—"All settled rulers, not mere marauders under the necessity of plundering while they could, have recognised that security to the cultivators means in the long run the best revenue.....The harshness of native rule is usually inferred from the heavy revenue demand or the excessive share of the produce; but it is forgotten that the demand was not enforced except in the most elastic manner, and that pressure was relaxed at once in a bad season. The European principle is a low rent and punctual, inexorable payment. The Oriental rule is the largest possible claim and only take what you can for the season" (*The Indian Village Community*, p. 209 n.).

some general observations regarding the class of lands alienated by the State. The Arthaśāstra, as we have seen,¹ recommends the grant of lands by the king to certain classes of Brāhmaṇas with complete exemption from taxes and fines. The numerous examples of land-grants in the ancient Indian historical records tend to show that land was frequently granted by the rulers for pious purposes, and that these grants were contemplated to be perpetual and heritable and not only revenue-free but often charged with assignment of the revenues. The evidence of those records, however, is enough to show that the ruling authority frequently maintained a strict supervision over the pious grants. We thus find that the grants made even in favour of the Brāhmaṇas are sometimes expressly declared to be resumable for breach of certain specified conditions.² In other cases, again, the grantees were saddled with the obligation of excluding revenue-paying tenants from the revenue-free villages.³ Finally the recorded instances of the resumption of pious grants for loss or forgery of the royal charter⁴ would seem to point to an organised system for the periodical inspection of revenue-free tenures by the State authorities.

With regard to other classes of alienated lands the Arthaśāstra and the Smṛtis mention lands granted as remuneration for service to officials, such grants resembling in part (as said above) the Waṭan and the Jaigir of Muhammadan times.⁵ Concrete instances of such grants are also mentioned in the historical records, the holders usually being excluded from the right of alienation of their lands.⁶ Grants of a more special character, which are likewise mentioned in the inscrip-

¹ Above, p. 43.

² *Ibid.*, p. 195.

³ *Ibid.*, pp. 190-191.

⁴ *Ibid.*, pp. 196, 234; *cf.* also Ep. Ind., Vol. VII, No. 25.

⁵ See above, pp. 44-51.

⁶ *Ibid.*, pp. 212-213.

tions, are those bestowed as fees for learning and as military pensions to the heirs of persons killed in battle.¹

Let us next consider a group of revenues which may properly be included under the class of taxes on incomes other than agricultural ones. The Arthaśāstra mentions a revenue item technically called the City Superintendent and based upon the census returns of specified officers called *gopas*. This we have suggested to mean a kind of general income-tax upon the inhabitants of the city.² Direct reference is made apparently to this tax by Megasthenes in his account of the Maurya Empire.³ Again, Manu refers to taxes upon merchants and artisans, and the rules for their levy indicate a remarkable attempt to shift the burden to the net profit.⁴ Taxes on usurers and money-lenders are mentioned in the Sukranīti.⁵ Of the taxes on wages a conspicuous example is the disreputable levy on the wages of prostitutes mentioned in the Arthaśāstra,⁶ its parallel being found in the revenue system of Imperial Rome.

The Arthaśāstra, and to less extent the Smṛtis, mention certain charges which may be said properly to belong to the class of internal taxes on commodities, and other charges falling under the category of customs duties.⁷ References in the inscriptions⁸ testify to the prevalence of charges of this kind in different parts of Northern India at different times. A careful consideration of the rules connected with this class of taxes leads us to claim for it some marks of an advanced system. Such are the close correspondence between excise and import duties, the concentration of sales of merchandise at the toll-house in the capital for facilitating the collection of the tax, the prohibition of the export of

¹ Above, pp. 242, 253.

³ *Ibid.*, pp. 179-180.

⁵ *Ibid.*, pp. 102-103.

⁷ *Ibid.*, pp. 68ff, 106-7,

² *Ibid.*, p. 84.

⁴ *Ibid.*, pp. 19, 84-85.

⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 97.

⁸ *Ibid.*, pp. 179, 227, 235-236, 239, 252.

food-grains, cattle, and the like, and the facility of importation of agricultural seeds.¹ On the negative side it contains not a single instance of a duty on the sale or manufacture of all articles like the notorious *alcavala* and the *bolla* of the Spanish Empire, while it betrays a very remarkable dread of unauthorised tolls.²

In connection with the present point, we may notice in some detail the charges levied upon two special articles. The *Arthaśāstra*, as mentioned above,³ contemplates a revenue from salt to be derived from a combined system of State monopoly, excise duties and customs. Reference to the royal monopoly of salt is to be found in the clause of the land-grants exempting the donees from fines for extracting salt as well as those bestowing the salt-mines upon them.⁴ Of the consequences of the tax on salt we have not much information, but there is not the slightest evidence to show that its levy was attended with such evil consequences as those of the French *gabelle*. With regard to the revenue from liquors, the *Arthaśāstra*, as mentioned above,⁵ provides for its levy by means of State regulation of the manufacture and sale of the intoxicant. We, however, already observe in this work a tendency to limit the consumption of liquors in the interest of morality. This tendency must have been largely promoted by the teachings of the Buddhist and Jaina scriptures as well as the Brahminical *Smṛtis*. In the twelfth century the history of Gujarat furnishes an authentic instance of a king's deliberate sacrifice of the revenue from liquors under the inspiration of his Jaina preceptor.⁶

We may mention in this connection another branch of revenue presenting an analogous history to that of the tax on

¹ Above, pp. 71-73, 84.

² *Ibid.*, pp. 88-89.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 106 ff.

⁴ *Ibid.*, pp. 188, 194.

⁵ *Ibid.*, pp. 72-73.

⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 258.

liquors just mentioned. The Arthaśāstra as well as a number of Smṛtis contemplates the king as deriving revenue from gambling through the provision of State gambling houses. On the other hand other Smṛtis place gambling under a ban on moral grounds.¹ The history of Gujarat in the case just mentioned furnishes a concrete example of a king's prohibition of gambling at a heavy sacrifice to the royal treasury under Jaina religious influences.

We shall now consider a group of royal revenues belonging to the class of what are called economic or quasi-private receipts of the State in the *parlance* of the modern science of Public Finance. As regards the category of State or public domain, the Arthaśāstra refers to royal farms which are either to be worked (as in the Frankish empire under Charlemagne) under the direct supervision of the State steward, or else let out to tenants of various grades.² Along with these it mentions State gardens and forests of which the former is to be worked wholly and the latter in part for the benefit of the king's treasury, while other classes of forests are meant to provide for the king's recreation or for recruitment of the royal force of elephants.³ The records of the Maurya period apparently tend to show that the royal farms used to be let out on lease to tenants, while those of the Gupta Empire not only point to the State ownership of waste lands, but also illustrate the restrictions imposed even upon the possessors of those lands by right of sale.⁴

With regard to the group corresponding to the category of industrial domain, we have to observe that the mines in ancient India as in other lands of antiquity as well as modern times were held to belong to the State. But while the

¹ See above, pp. 91-92, 100-101.

² *Ibid.*, pp. 29-34.

³ *Ibid.*, pp. 108-109.

⁴ *Ibid.*, pp. 169-170, 200.

Arthaśāstra requires them to be worked by the State or let out on lease, one Smṛti work recommends the State management of all mines, while other authorities are content to lay down heavy rates of taxes upon their output.¹ Evidently the State administration of mines was in general thought to be less desirable than private management. The clause of the land grants assigning mines of base metals and salt deposits (*lohalavanākara*) in favour of the donees, together with pointed references in some specific records to the State income from mines,² tend to prove that the State ownership contemplated in the theoretical works was observed in practice. Besides the royal monopoly of mines, the Arthaśāstra refers to or implies a number of State manufacturing concerns like spinning and weaving factories, factories for the manufacture of oils, clarified butter and sugar, workshops for manufacture of forest products and ores from mines and so forth.³ These may be compared to the *kārkhānās* of Mughal India, and still more to the State manufacturing establishments existing in many countries of Continental Europe down to our own times. For although they are counted among the recognised sources of the royal revenue, their purpose is frequently implied or stated to be other than financial gain, such, *e.g.*, as the protection of the people against dishonest artisans, the provision for military defence and so forth.⁴

In connection with the present point it may be mentioned that the proceeds of the royal lands, forests and mines and so forth furnish in the Arthaśāstra the occasion for an organised system of State trading, and the profits of these transactions form a distinct revenue item called the Superintendent of Merchandise. The sale of the royal merchandise,

¹ Above, pp. 104-108, 111.

² *Ibid.*, pp. 248, 254, 261.

³ *Ibid.*, pp. 90-91, 106, 109.

⁴ *Ibid.*, pp. 91, 109.

according to the policy of the Arthaśāstra, was to be undertaken either by the State officers concerned, or else by private vendors on payment of specified fees.¹

The last-named item introduces us to the large body of receipts in the Hindu system corresponding to the class of what are called administrative revenues in modern times. The Arthaśāstra, as we have seen, mentions fines along with supplementary charges to which it refers with disapproval, in its general list of sources of revenue.² Moreover, it frequently mentions in connection with the different branches of the royal revenue fines to be imposed for breach of regulations connected with their administration ; as well as fees, hiring charges and so forth to be paid in return for various concessions.³ In the class of fees just mentioned may be included the charges for coinage consisting according to the Arthaśāstra of three items amounting to 13½ per cent. and sometimes also an additional charge of 16 per cent.⁴ These may be compared with the revenue from seignorage exacted in mediaeval Europe by the feudal lord or chief, and still more with the charges for coinage prevailing in many European countries down to our own times.

Let us next consider a class of receipts accruing to the king by virtue of the traditional laws of inheritance, ownership and the like. As we have seen, the Arthaśāstra and the Smṛtis lay down the rule that the king is to inherit property (other than that of the Brāhmaṇas) in the absence of all heirs. We have further observed how the references in the general literature as well as concrete instances from the inscriptions tend to show that the kings in practice frequently used to seize the property of persons dying sonless.⁵ Other references point

¹ Above, pp. 80-81.

² *Ibid.*, pp. 93-94.

³ *Ibid.*, pp. 26, 47, 74, 77-80, 92, 94, 105-106, 108, 181.

⁴ *Ibid.*, pp. 92-93.

⁵ *Ibid.*, pp. 112-114, 237, 257.

to the practice of confiscation of unclaimed property by the king even in cases of its formerly belonging to the Brāhmaṇas, although the act was regarded with disapproval.¹ The instance of Kumārapāla, king of Gujarat, which has been mentioned above, shows how this odious exaction was given up by the ruling authority under the influence of Jaina teachings.² Turning to another point we may state that the Arthaśāstra and the Smṛtis permit the king to take the treasure trove in whole or in part according to circumstances. Corroborative evidence of the king's title to treasures and deposits is furnished by the clauses of the land-grants including them in the list of privileges assigned to the donees.³

We have reserved for consideration in the last place a group of revenues partaking of the primitive character of contributions in the form of service. Forced or unpaid labour, as we have seen, is contemplated by Kauṭilya to be included along with other contributions in the *gopa's* census of houses and the revenue-roll of the *samāhartā*.⁴ The frequent references in the historical records prove that this burden was a familiar institution in various parts of Northern India in ancient times.⁵ Its nature seems to have varied at different times and places. For while some references in the general literature and concrete examples from the history of the Himalayan States⁶ would show it to have been apparently as fruitful a source of oppression as the French *corvée* in the eighteenth century, it appears from other evidence⁷ to have been probably as

¹ Above pp. 117-118.

² *Ibid.*, p. 257.

³ *Ibid.*, pp. 195, 242, 254.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 50.

⁵ *Ibid.*, pp. 189, 216, 227, 232-233, 238, 240, 251.

⁶ *Ibid.*, pp. 40, 232-233, 251.

⁷ *Ibid.*, pp. 225-227.

mild in its operation as the English Statute labour in the sixteenth and early seventeenth centuries.

It remains to notice the branch of the Hindu system concerned with the levy of emergency revenues. The rules under this head in the technical literature have the same crude character as that belonging to the financial systems of European countries before the development of public credit. They involve not only the arbitrary enhancement of the normal rates under specific heads, but in the Arthasāstra various ingenious methods of raising money by force and fraud, and in other authorities the wholesale spoliation of subjects with the exception of some favoured classes.¹ A new note is sounded in the Śukraniti which mentions, besides the usual devices for raising the revenue, the levy of forced loans.² The methods of raising the extraordinary revenue that are mentioned in the historical records, while partaking of the same primitive character as the foregoing ones, furnish some novel examples. Such are the sale of divine images and debasement of the coinage attributed by the records to the Maurya and the Gupta periods respectively.³ Such, again, was evidently the case at least at their first institution with the curious taxes called *mallakara* and *turuṣkadanḍa*, if we have to understand by them the taxes levied for meeting the attack of the Mallas and the Turks respectively.⁴

Altogether distinct from the above but worthy of being mentioned in the same connection are the irregular exactions of tyrannical rulers that are referred to in some of the historical records. Among the examples of this class may be mentioned the tax on Jaina pilgrims and the more unusual tax upon the Brāhmaṇas, which were subsequently abrogated

¹ See above, pp. 125-134.

² *Ibid*, pp. 134-135.

³ *Ibid*, pp. 182, 193.

⁴ *Ibid*, pp. 232-233, 262-263.

by the rulers of the countries concerned.¹ Of the same nature are the curious taxes and fines mentioned in some of the Nepal inscriptions, which were remitted in part by later rulers.² The most complete account of such exactions, however, is furnished by Kalhana, the historian of Kashmir, who specifically mentions the spoliation of temples, the defilement and confiscation of the divine images, the institution of forced carriage of loads and so forth.³

Let us conclude this chapter with an estimate of the influence exercised by the Ancient Indian revenue system upon subsequent times. We have already endeavoured in the course of the preceding pages to show how the institutions of the Hindu rulers in early times anticipated at many points, and notably in the domain of land-revenue, the methods and arrangements of their Moslem successors. To suppose that these coincidences were accidental is contrary not only to the probabilities of the case, but also to what we know of the slowness with which Moslem rule took root on the Indian soil. Indeed it seems risky to conclude, in view of the absence in Mediæval India of distinctively Islamic features, such as the distinction between "tithe-land" and "tribute-land," that the Moslem conquest brought with it a fusion of the indigenous system with the nearly identical system of the conquerors.⁴ When therefore, we find in the revenue history of Mediæval India some striking features which had their parallels in the earlier period, such as the method of land-survey and cash payments of the land-revenue, we need have little hesitation in connecting them with a causal relation. With regard to the type of clan-monarchies which are so characteristic of the Rajput

¹ Above, pp. 258, 261.

² *Ibid.*, pp. 232-233.

³ *Ibid.*, pp. 249-252.

⁴ Contrast, W. H. Moreland, *The Agrarian System of Moslem India*, p. 16.

States in modern times, we have already shown by the incontrovertible testimony of contemporary records that they can be traced back to the later Hindu period. It may, therefore, be stated with confidence that many of the revenue institutions of Ancient India, so far from being swept away by the shock of the Moslem conquest, received a new lease of life after that catastrophe.

GLOSSARY OF FISCAL TERMS

(A)

Agrahāra—land granted to the Brāhmaṇas for subsistence. *Devāgrahāra* (Uchchakalpa in Bundelkhand; Maitrakas of Kathiawar)—land granted in favour of temples.

Ākūśotpatti (feudatories of Chandels, Chedis)—‘produce of the sky,’ probably identical with *bhūtavātapratyāya* (q. v.).

Akiñchītkara, var. *akiñchidgrāhya*—free from tax.

Akṣayanīvi (Śātavāhanas of Deccan and later). Same as *nīvidharma*.

Anyajāta (Artha.)—‘accidental revenue.’ (One of three specified kinds of revenue.)

Apratikara (Guptas in Bengal)—without the right of alienation.

Aputtrikādhana (Gurjara-Pratihāras in Rajputana). Probably refers to the king’s claim to confiscate the property of all persons who died sonless.

Ātithya (Artha.)—lands assigned to government officers for public charities.

Ātivāhika (Artha.)—escorting-fee paid by the merchants.

Āṭapatibhāga (Kashmir, 9th century and later)—office entrusted with the share of the lord of the market.

Ātyaya (Artha.)—prescribed fine.

Aupāyanika (Artha.)—earnings from presents.

Autkhetika, (Kāmarūpa, 10th century)—officer charged with collection of the *utkhetana* impost.

Avalagaka, var. *avalagana* (Chota Nagpore, 8th century). Probably, presents or supplies. •

Āvātāya (Uchchakalpa, etc.)—‘the revenue derived from the elements.’ Probably identical with *bhūtavātapratyāya* (q. v.).

Āya (Artha., Smṛtis, Śukraniti, etc.)—revenue in general ; (Uchchakalpa and later)—a special branch of revenue.

Āyudhīya (Artha.)—lands supplying troops in lieu of tax.

(B)

Bali (Vedic Samhitās and Brāhmaṇas)—voluntary gift (afterwards, compulsory contribution) from the subjects, and tribute. Later, tax in general (the standard lexicons) ; king's grain-share, identical with *bhāga* but different from *kara* (Smṛtis, Epics, etc.) ; extra cess over and above the king's grain-share of *bhāga* (Artha., Aśoka and Rudradāman).

Bhāga (Vedic Samhitās and Brāhmaṇas)—doubtful. Later tax in general, identical with *bali* and *kara* (lexicons) ; king's share of produce, distinguished from *bali* and *kara* (Aśoka and Rudradāman). Special forms in Artha. (1) *lavāṇa-bhāga* (king's share of salt sold by private merchants), (2) *udakabhāga* (king's grain-share levied as water-rate upon irrigated fields), (3) king's share of the produce of mines leased out to private persons, (4) share paid to the king by merchants for selling the royal merchandise.

Bhāgabhogakara (Uchchakalpa and later)—king's grain-share, identical with *bhāga* of Artha., and *bali* of Smṛtis. Distinguished from *dhānya* in a record of Maitrakas of Kathiawar, where it probably means fixed contribution in kind as distinguished from the contribution consisting of a share of the produce.

Bhāṇḍāgārika (Northern Satrapas of Mathurā)—superintendent of royal storehouse. Identical with *bhāṇḍāgārādhiṛta* (Kāmarūpa, 7th century).

Bhikṣuhalaparihāra (Śātavāhanas of Deccan)—immunity of land belonging to the Buddhist order.

Bhoga (Gurjara-Pratihāras in Rajputana, etc.)—periodical supplies of fruits, firewood, flowers and the like which the villagers had to furnish to the king.

Bhūmichchhidranyāya (Kāmarūpa at the end of 5th or beginning of 6th century, Uchchakalpa, and frequently later)—‘the maxim of the barren land,’ *i. e.*, with such right of ownership as is acquired by a man making barren land cultivable for the first time.

Bhūtavātapratyāya (Traikūṭakas of Gujarat and frequently afterwards)—‘the revenue derived from the elements and the winds’.

Brahmadeya (Artha., Maitrakas, etc.)—land suitable for being granted to the Brāhmaṇas.

Brāhmaṇavimśati (Maitrakas)—tithe upon villagers for the support of the Brāhmaṇas.

Bullagakara (Jaina text quoted in *Abhidhānarājendra* s. v., *kara*)—tax relating to the supervision of meals.

(C)

Chauravarjjam (Parivrājakas in Central Provinces and later), var. *choravarjjam*, *choradaṇḍavarjjam* (Uchchakalpa, etc.), *Chorarājāpathyakārivarjjam* (Traikūṭakas)—with immunity from the police-tax.

Chauroddharāṇa (Pālas of Bengal, etc.). Identical with *chauravarjjam*.

Chorarajjū (Artha.)—rope for binding thieves. Probably the dues collected by Superintendent of village boundaries.

(D)

Dāna (Maitrakas, etc.)—the so-called voluntary gifts of subjects.

Daṇḍa—fines. Distinguished from *atyaya* (q.v.) in Artha.

Dānī (Chālukyas of Gujarat)—king’s dues.

Dāṇībhoga, var. *danībhogabhāga* (Chālukyas)—periodical supplies of fruits, firewood and the like by villagers.

Dāradraṇaka (Central Provinces, 8th century)—an agricultural cess or a marriage-tax (Fleet).

Deyameya (Śātavāhanas in Deccan)—king's share in kind and in cash. Identical with *dhānyahiraṇya* (q. v.) of later records.

Devadeya (Maitrakas)—grant made in favour of temples.

Dhānyahiraṇya (Maitrakas, etc.)—revenue in kind and in cash.

Dharmadeya (Maitrakas)—religious grant in general.

Dhruvādhikaraṇika (Maitrakas)—officer in charge of persons entrusted with superintendence of collection of land-revenue by farmers.

Ditya (Traikūṭakas)—tax.

Drārādeya (Artha.)—‘gate-dues,’ a surcharge over and above the tolls on goods imported into the city.

Dyūta (Artha.). A technical term for the king's dues collected by the Superintendent of gambling.

(G)

Gaṇjādhikārin (Kashmir, 10th century)—treasury officer.

Gaṇjavara (Northern Satraps of Mathurā)—treasurer.

Gopa (Artha.)—(1) officer in charge of five or ten villages with revenue and police functions ; (2) officer in charge of ten, twenty or forty families in the city.

Gṛhakṛtya (Kashmir, 9th and later centuries)—office concerned with domestic affairs of the kingdom.

Gulmadeya (Artha.)—dues paid at the military or the police stations.

(H)

Halikākara (Uchchakalpa)—plough-tax.

Hiranya (Artha., Smṛtis, Uchchakalpa and frequently later)—king's share of certain crops paid in cash.

(J)

Jaṃghā (Jāt.)—forced service as messenger.

Jaṃghākarika (Amara.)—‘one who pays the royal dues by means of his legs,’ *i.e.*, one who is liable to compulsory service as messenger.

Jāṃghika (Amara., Smṛti of Śaṅkha-Likhita). Same as *jaṃghā*.

(K)

Kalyāṇadhana (Chandels and Chedis, Paramāras of Malwa). Unexplained.

Kara (Lexicons, occasionally Artha., Mahā.)—tax in general; (Artha.)—(1) periodical tax over and above the king’s customary grain-share, (2) emergency tax levied upon the villagers over and above the normal grain-share, (3) tax upon merchants’ profits.

Kārukara (Śātavāhanas). Probably identical with *udraṅga* and *uparikara* (q.v.).

Kauṣṭheyaka (Artha.)—earnings from the king’s store-house.

Khalabhikṣā (Gurjara-Pratihāras in Rajputana)—portion of crop over and above the usual grain-share collected from grain heaped upon threshing-floor.

Khoṭa (Abhidhānarājendra, s. v. *parihāra*)—what is payable to the king in the share of *hiranya* (q.v.) and so forth, comprising compulsory labour and the provision of food for the regular and irregular troops.

Khoṭabhaṅga otherwise called *ukhoṭabhaṅga* and *akṣoṭabhaṅga* (Abhidhānarājendra, *loc. cit.*). Applies to a person residing for one, two or three years, or as long as the king’s favour extends, without contributing the *hiranya* and so forth, and without providing food for the regular and irregular troops.

Kṛpta (Artha.)—fixed tax (one of seven specified sources of revenue).

Koṣaḡra (Artha., etc.)—treasury.

Koṣṭhāgāra (Artha., Sohgaure inscription, etc.)—royal granary.

Kumāragadīnaka (Gaharwārs of Kanouj). Unexplained. Probably a tax at the rate of so much per *gadyānaka* (weight equivalent to 32 *guṇja* berries mentioned in Yāj. III, 258) on behalf of the royal princes.

Kupyagrha (Artha.)—storehouse for forest produce.

Kūtaka (Gaharwārs of Kanouj). Unexplained.

(L)

Lakṣaṇādhyakṣa (Artha.)—a technical term for royal dues received by Superintendent of the Mint.

(M)

Mallakara (Lichchavis of Nepal, 6th century)—tax levied as tribute to the Mallas or for defence against their attack.

Maṇḍapikā (Gurjara-Pratihāras, etc.)—custom-house.

Mārgganaka (Gurjara-Pratihāras in Rajputana and Malwa; Chālukyās of Gujarat)—benevolences of a general character, as distinguished from the special forms called *prasthaka* and *skandhaka* (q. v.).

Mayūṭa (Gurjara-Pratihāras in Rajputana). Probably the contributions of fruits, firewood, etc., paid by villagers.

Mṛttukavṛtti (Chandels of Bundelkhand)—land granted by the king as military pension to the heir of person killed in battle.

Mūla (Artha.)—investment of capital (one of seven specified sources of revenue).

Mūlya (Artha.)—proceeds of sale of metal-ware manufactured in the State workshops.

Meya (Śātavāhanas, etc.)—revenue from agricultural land paid in kind. Identical with *bhāga* and *bhāgabhogakara*.

(N)

Nadīpāla (Artha.)—a technical term for the fixed tax on villages situated upon the banks of rivers and lakes.

Naṣṭabharata, var. *naṣṭibharata* (Gaharwārs of Kanouj). Unexplained.

Nāvah—a technical term for the hire of royal boats.

Nidhāna (Chālukyas of Gujarat, etc.)—a kind of cess imposed upon agricultural land.

Nidhi (Artha., Smṛtis and frequently in inscriptions)—treasure trove.

Nikṣepa (Artha., Smṛtis, inscriptions)—deposits.

Nīvidharma, (Śātavāhanas, Guptas and frequently later)—the condition that the donee should not destroy the principal, but should only make use of the income arising from it.

(P)

Pañchakula (Gurjara-Pratihāras in Malwa; Chālukyas of Gujarat, etc.)—class of officers charged with control of the custom-house, with deposit of property of persons dying without heirs into the royal treasury, etc.

Pañchāparādha (Later Guptas of Magadha, Lichchavis of Nepal, etc.)—privilege of remission of penalties for committing five offences.

Panyasaṁsthā (Artha.) A technical term for various dues collected for the king by the Superintendent of the Market and the Superintendent of Merchandise.

Parigha (Artha.)—‘Tormaut,’ one of seven specified sources of revenue.

Pārihārīka (Artha.)—land exempted from revenue.

Pārikhīṇika (Artha.)—damage-fee, a branch of ‘accidental revenue’.

Pārīkṣika (Artha.)—testing-charge for private minting of coins.

Pārśva (Artha.)—extra charge upon land over and above the king's grain-share, a branch of 'accidental revenue'.

Paryuṣita (Artha.)—'outstanding revenue,' one of three specified kinds of revenue.

Paṭṭanam (Artha.) A technical term for duties levied upon merchants at the ports.

Pautavam (Artha.) A technical term for various dues of the king collected by the Superintendent of Weights and Measures.

Piṇḍaka (Pālas of Bengal). Probably identical with *hiraṇya* (q. v.).

Piṇḍakara (Artha.)—lump assessment upon villages.

Prakraya (Artha.)—rent from mines and salt-works.

Pranaya (Artha., Rudradāman inscription)—emergency tax or benevolence.

Prasthaka (Gurjara-Pratihāras)—a cess on each *prastha* of grain over and above the usual grain-share. *Daśabandha-visatiathuprastha*, *akṣapaṭalaprastha*, *pratihāraprastha* (Gaharwārs of Kanouj)—contributions paid by the villagers at so much per *prastha* measure on account of the officers concerned.

Pratibhāga, var. *pratibhoga* and *prātibhoga*, (Manu)—offerings of fruits, firewood, roots and the like paid by villagers to the king.

Pratikara (Kashmir, 9th century, etc.)—compensatory allowance paid by the State to dispossessed owners of temple lands.

Prāivedhanika (Artha.)—punching-fee collected from merchants at the time of inspection of weights and measures.

Pratyāya (Uchchakalpa and later)—revenue.

Pravanikara (Gaharwārs of Kanouj). Probably a tax levied upon certain classes of merchants.

(R)

Rajjū (Artha.)—a fiscal term probably meaning the cost realised by the State in connection with the expenses of land-measurement.

Ratnatrayasambhoga (Pālas of Bengal). Probably a contribution from the villages for support of the Buddhist faith.

Rūḍhabhāroḍi (Kashmir, 9th century and later)—system of forced carriage of loads.

Rūpa (Artha.)—(1) a subsidiary charge in excess of the prescribed fines ; (2) a charge upon mines and upon imported salt.

Rūpika (Artha.)—single tax, one of seven specified sources of revenue.

(S)

Sakarukara (Śātavāhanas). Probably identical with *sodraṅga soparikara* ('with the *udraṅga* and *uparikara* taxes' q. v.).

Sadaśāparādha (Maitrakas of Valabhī and later), var. *sadaṇḍadaśāparādha* and *sadaṇḍadosadaśāparādha* (Rāṣṭrakūṭas in Gujarat and later), *sahyadaśāparādha* (Pālas of Bengal)—with the privilege of remission for the ten offences.

Samāhartā (Artha.)—'Collector-general,' officer in charge of collection of various branches of revenue.

Samsthā (Artha.) A technical term meaning the king's dues derived from the market-place.

Samudayabāhya (Guptas in Bengal)—revenue-free.

Sauvarṇika (Artha.). A technical term for the profits of the royal monopoly of manufacture of gold and silver articles.

Sannidhātā (Artha.)—official charged with the receipt of various articles into the king's treasury.

Senābhakta (Artha.)—contributions of oil, rice and so forth, which the villagers have to pay at the time of march of the royal army.

Sītā (Artha.)—produce of the royal farms.

Skandhaka (Gurjara-Pratihāras). Probably a cess at a certain rate per load.

Sthānika (Artha.)—(1) officer in charge of one-fourth of the kingdom, (2) officer in charge of one-fourth of the city.

Sulka (Vedic Samhitās, Pāṇini)—tax, probably identical with *bali*. Later, (Smṛtis, lexicons, Uchchakalpa and later inscriptions)—ferry dues, tolls and transit duties ; (Artha.)—duties levied upon articles imported into the city, port-dues, duty upon the sale of liquors, customs collected by the ferrymen and boundary-officers, duty upon mining products, duty upon imported salt, duty upon animals intended for slaughter ; (Śukra.)—tolls and duties, duty upon building-sites, etc.

Sūnā (Artha.)—technical term for royal dues collected by the Superintendent of slaughter-house.

Sūtra (Artha.)—technical title for royal receipts collected by the Superintendent of weaving.

(T)

Talapada (Chālukyas of Gujarat)—lands fully assessed for revenue, as distinguished from estates which were held on condition of service or for a reduced lump assessment.

Tara, *taradeya* (Artha.)—ferry-dues. *Tārīka*, *tārya* (Smṛtis)—identical with *tara*.

Tulyameya (Harṣa and later)—‘what is to be weighed and what is to be measured.’ Collective designation for the contribution in kind.

Turuṣkaḍaṇḍa (Gaharwārs of Kanouj). Probably a tax levied for meeting the attack of the Muhammadan Turks.

[*Cf.* Danegeld in Early English History.]

(U)

Udraṅga (Parivrājakas, Maitrakas, Later Guptas of Magadha and frequently later). Probably a tax on permanent tenants.

Uparikara (Guptas, Parivrājakas and frequently later)—tax paid by temporary tenants.

Upaskara (Vaidyadeva of Kāmarūpa)—appurtenance of a tax (*kara*).

Upasthāna (Artha.)—a group of royal receipts arising from underhand methods of collection of the contributions in kind.

Utkhetana (Kāmarūpa, 10th-11th centuries)—impost levied upon the villagers on specified occasions.

Utkhetayitā (Kāmarūpa, 7th century)—officer charged with collection of *utkhetana* impost. Identical with *autkhetika* (Kāmarūpa, 10th-11th centuries).

Utsaṅga (Artha.)—extra cess levied upon villagers and citizens on occasions of festive events, such as the birth of a prince.

(V)

Vaidharana (Artha.)—compensation-fee levied upon the sale of liquors, royal merchandise, mining products and imported salt.

Valadī (Gaharwārs of Kanouj). Unexplained.

Varttamāna (Artha.)—‘running revenue.’

Varttanī (Artha.)—transit duties collected by the ferry-men, the Superintendent of tolls and the boundary officer.

Vibhāga (Artha.)—king’s share of output of mines ; rent from mines and from private manufacturers of salt.

Vidyādhana (Kathiawar, 10th century)—land assigned as a reward for learning.

Viṣayadāna (Gaharwārs of Kanouj). Unexplained.

Viṣṭi (Artha., Rudradāman inscription, Traikūṭakas, Maitrakas and later)—unpaid labour. *Bhoṭṭaviṣṭi* (Nepal, 6th or 7th century)—forced labour for Tibet service.

Vitṭollakara (Maitrakas)—contribution of forced labour.

Vivita (Artha.). A technical term for royal dues collected by the Superintendent of pastures.

Vyājñ (Artha.)—(1) compensation-fee levied upon the sale of liquors, royal merchandise, mining products, salt and sugar; (2) charge paid for coinage; (3) subsidiary charge over and above the regular fines.

Vyaya (Artha., Smṛtis, Śukra.)—State expenditure.

(Y)

Yamalikāmbali, var. *yavalikāmbali* (Gaharwārs of Kanouj). Unexplained.

ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS

Page.	Line.	For	Read
3	6	1200 B.C.	1200—800 B.C.
9	foot-note 2	Maitr.	Maitr.
„	foot-note 3	Aṣṭaka	Aṣṭaka
„	„	Omit 21	
15	21	Nītivākyaṃṛitam	Nītivākyaṃṛtam
25	12	sixty-seven	sixty-seven (or sixty-eight)
44	25	Omit village and	
63	4	$\frac{1}{8}$	$\frac{1}{6}$
66	27	Sukranīti	Śukranīti
68	foot-note 3	Bāhyamābhayan- tarañ	Bāhyamābhyan- taram
89	22	princes	prices
97	1	prostitutes	prostitutes
100	11	like	unlike
106	13	Khanyādhyakṣa	Khanyadhyakṣa
125	19	the	be
138	3	pro quid	pro quo
169	foot-note	law	land
187	13	After instance add in this part of India,	
188	3	After araṭhasavinayika. add The same list of immunities occurs in the Koṇḍamudi plates of Jayavarman (Ep. Ind., Vol. VI, No. 31) belong- ing to the period of Śivaskanda- varman and the Śātavāhana kings.	
212	foot-note 5	chordanda	choradanda



SANSKRIT INDEX

A

- Adhiṣṭhānādihikarāṇa*, 'office of the district head-quarters,' 202-204.
Adhyakṣas, functions of, 146-150.
Ākāśotpatti, a revenue term, 254.
Anutpannadānasamudgrāhaka, an official title, 221-222.
Aputrikādhana, a revenue term, 237.
Arthaśāstra, compared with *Smṛtis*, 45, 84, 121; compared with *Megasthenes*, 70n, 181.
Ātivāhika, a kind of fee, 77.
Atṭapatibhāga, an official title, 250.
Atyaya, a class of fines, 26, 108.
Aupāyanika, receipts from presents, 28, 38.
Avalagaka (var. *avalagana*), a revenue term, 230-231.
Avātāya, a revenue term, 214-215.
Āyamukha, 26.
Āyaśarīra, 25.
Āyudhīya, a class of lands, 43, 46.

B

- Bali*, a revenue term, 3-8, 27-28, 36, 58 and n, 171, 173, 189.
Bhadrabhoga, a revenue term, 215.
Bhāga, a technical term, 26-27, 34-35, 171, 189.
Bhāgabhogakara, a technical term, *expld.*, 214; *refs.*, 213-214, 218, 223, 227, 231, 238, 244, 246, 253, 255n, 256, 260, 261, 264n.
Bhāgadugha, an official title, 9.
Bhāṇḍāgārādhikṛta, an official title, 224.
Bhoga, a technical term, 237.
Bhogabhāga, a revenue term, 241-242.
Bhūmichchidranyāya, a technical term, *expld.*, 212 n; *refs.*, 196, 212, 244, 249, 264n.
Bhūtavātapratyāya, a revenue term, *expld.*, 217; *refs.*, 215-216, 218, 220, 240.
Brahmadeya, a class of lands, 187, 217-218.

C

- Chauravarjiam*, a technical term, *expld.*, 211; *refs.*, 209, 213, 246.
Chauroddharana, a technical term, *expld.*, 243*n*; *refs.*, 243, 245, 246, 248.
Choradandavarjyam, a technical term, 212*n*.
Chorarājāpathyakārivarjiam, a technical title, 215*n*.
Chorarajjū, a revenue term, 41-42.
Choravarjiam. Same as *chauravarjiam*.

D

- Daṇḍ*, a technical term, 258.
Daṇḍa, fines, 94-95, 108.
Daṇḍādāya, 253-254.
Dāṇī, a revenue term, 242.
Dānībhāga, 256.
Dāradraṇaka, a revenue term, 242.
Daśāparādha, a technical term, *expld.*, 219-220; *refs.*, 218, 230, 233, 236.
 236-237, 238, 240-243, 245-246, 261, 263-264.
Devāgrahāra, a class of lands, 212, 217 and *n*, 218.
Devādhyakṣa, an official title, 99.
Devavihāra, a class of lands, 217.
Dhruvādhikaraṇika, an official title, 221.
Ditya, a revenue term, 216.
Durga, a technical title, 168ff., 90ff.
Duṣṭasādhya, a revenue term, 254*n*.
Dvārādeya, a revenue term, 60*n*.

G

- Gaulmika*, an official title, 246.
Gopas, functions of, 49-50, 146-147; compared with *patwaries*, 51.
Gṛhakarṭya, a technical title, 250 and *n*.
Gulmaḍeya, a class of fees, 78, 227

H

- Halikākara*, a revenue term, 213-214.
Hiranya, a revenue term, *expld.*, 60-62; *refs.*, 39, 59, 190, 215-216, 218,
 220, 223, 231, 238, 240, 244, 245*n*, 246, 252, 255*n*, 256, 260-263, 264*n*.

K

- Kalyāṇadhana*, a revenue term, 254, 261.
Kara, a revenue term, 27-28, 36-37, 58n, 64-65, 85, 128, 244.
Kāruṣilpigaṇa, a technical term, 98.
Khalabhikṣā, a kind of cess, 237.
Koṣa, 16-18.

L

- Lakṣaṇādhyakṣa*, a technical title, 92-93.

M

- Mallakara*, a revenue term, 232-233.
Maṇḍapikā, custom-house, 238-239.
Mārggaṇaka, a kind of cess, 235-238, 254n, 256.
Mayūṭa, a revenue term, 237.
Meya, a revenue term, 190, 215, 216n.
Mudrādhyakṣa, a technical term, 96.
Mūla, a revenue term, 26.

N

- Nadīpala*, 76ff.
Nāgarika, a revenue term, 95-96,
Nāvah, a revenue term, 76ff.
Nibandha, 49.
Nidhāna, a kind of cess, 256.
Nidhi, 118-121.

P

- Pañchakula*, an official title, 238, 255, 257-258.
Pañchakulika, 242.
Panyasaṁsthā, a revenue term, 76.
Parigha, a revenue term, 26.
Pārihārika, a class of lands, 43-44.
Pārihiṇika, a kind of cess, 28.
Pāriṣika, a kind of fee, 43.
Pārśva, a kind of cess, 28, 38.
Paṭṭanam, a revenue term, 76.
Pautavam, a revenue term, 74-75.

Pinṇaka, a revenue term, 244-245.

Pinḍakara, a revenue term, 37.

Pradestṛ, a class of magistrates, functions of, 147.

Pranaya, a revenue term, 125-129, 189.

Prasthaka, a kind of cess, 237.

Pratibhāga, a revenue term, 65.

Pratikara, 49.

Prāivedhanika, a class of fees, 75, 85.

Pravaṇikara, a revenue term, *expld.*, 263*n*; *refs.*, 254, 261.

R

Rajjū, a revenue term, 53.

Rāṣṭra, a technical term, 27-29, 41, 76.

Rūḍhabhāroḍi, a technical term, 251.

Rūpa, a class of fees, 94, 106.

Rūpika, a class of fees, 26, 92, 106.

S

Saivara, a revenue term, 220.

Samāhartā, a class of officers, functions of, 43, 48-49, 129, 143-145 ;
compared with *kanungos*, 52.

Sannidhātā, a class of officers, functions of, 145-146.

Samgrahitr, an official title, 9.

Saṣṭhādhikṛta, an official title, 246.

Saulkika, an official title, 246.

Sauvarṇika, 90-91.

Senābhakta, a revenue term, 28, 37.

Setu, a technical term, 108-109.

Simhakara, a revenue term, 28.

Ṣitā, a revenue term, 29, 34.

Skandhaka, a kind of cess, 237-238.

Srāddhakara, 247*n*.

Sthānika, a class of officers, functions of, 50*ff*, 146-147.

Sulka, a revenue term, 6 and *n*, 69-72, 74, 77-79, 81-84, 86-83, 96, 103,
106, 189, 214, 239, 253.

Sūnā, a technical term, 96-97.

Surā, a technical term, 73.

Sūtra, a technical title, 90.

T

- Taila*, a technical term, 90.
Talapada, a class of lands, 256-257.
Taradeya, a class of fees, 78, 227.
Tārīka (var. *tārya*), 86.
Tulyameya, a revenue term, 223.
Turuṣkadarṇa, a revenue term, *expld.*, 263 ; *ref.*, 262.

U

- Udraṅga*, a revenue term, *expld.*, 210-211, *refs.*, 189, 209, 213, 216, 218, 223, 230, 236, 238, 240-241.
Uparikara, a revenue term, *expld.*, 210-211, *refs.*, 189-190, 209, 213, 216, 218, 230, 238, 240, 243, 248, 260.
Upasthāna, a technical title, 28, 47.
Utkara, a technical term, 47.
Utkhetana, a revenue term, 248.
Utkhetayitā, an official title, 274.
Utsaṅga, a kind of cess, 28, 37.

V

- Vaidharaṇa*, a class of fees, 74, 80, 106.
Vana, a technical term, 109-110.
Vaṇikpatha, a technical term, 79-80.
Varttanī, a revenue term, 77-78.
Vāstukam, a technical term, 97-98.
Vidyādhana, a class of lands, 242.
Viṣṭi, 189, 216. See also under *unpaid labour*.
Vivita, a technical term, 41-42.
Vraja, a technical term, 110.
Vyāñi, a class of fees, 26, 47, 74-75, 80, 92, 94, 105-106.

ENGLISH INDEX

A

- Agoranomi*, 171.
 Ain-i-Akbari, quoted, 53n, 60, 62 n.
 Aiyangar, S. Krishnaswami, quoted, 208.
 Allen, *Catalogue of Coins of Gupta Dynasties*, quoted, 193 n.
 Artisans and craftsmen, contributions from, 98-99, 101-102, 175-177.
 Assam. See under *Kāmarūpa*.
Astynomi, 171, 177.

B

- Baden-Powell, *Land-systems of British India*, quoted, 32n, 33n, 44n, 45n, 51n, 62n, 168n, 236n, 257n, 278n.
 Bandyopadhyaya, N. C., *Kauṭilya*, quoted, 61n.
 Banerjee, R. D., quoted, 60n, 197n, 214n, 243n.
 Basak, R. G., quoted, 192n, 199n, 200n, 201n, 202n, 204n, 205n, 206-209.
 Bastable, *Public Finance*, quoted, 17n, 19n, 22n, 23n, 273n.
 Bengal, 196-209, 242-247, 263-267.
 • Betelnut plantations, revenue from, 267.
 Bhandarkar, D. R., quoted, 60n, 266n.
 Bloch, Theodore, quoted, 202n.
 Brāhmaṇas, immunity of, from taxation, 7, 136-138; grant of lands to, 43, 157, 159, 160, 195; immunity of property of, from confiscation, 112-113, 117; right of, to treasure trove, 177ff.; taxation of, 261.
 Breloer, *Kauṭaliya-Studien*, quoted, 31n, 168ff., 276n.
 Buddhist Order, grant of lands to, 187-188.
 Buildings, tax upon, 97-98.
 Building-sites, tax upon, 103.
 Bundelkhand, 209-215, 252-254.
 Burgess, James, quoted, 188.

C

- Cattle, tax on, 39, 60, 66, 175, 253, 263.
 Central Provinces, 215, 242, 254.

Cess. See under *bali*, *bhoga*, *dāṇī*, *dāradraṇaka* *khalabhikṣā* *mārggaṇaka*, *mayūṭa*, *nidhāna*, *prasthaka*, *skandhaka*, *utsaṅga*.

Clan-monarchies, 236, 241, 259, 260.

Classification of revenues, 25-27.

Coinage, charges for. See under *lakṣaṇādhyakṣa*.

Customs, 252. See also under *maṇḍapikā*, *śulka*.

D

Daniels, W. M. *The Elements of Public Finance*, quoted, 273n.

Deccan, 187-188, 193-195.

Donations, revenue from public, 129.

E

Embanked reservoirs, king's ownership of, 64.

Expenditure, classification of State, 152-153.

F

Fa Hien, 191-192.

Famine-relief, 84n, 158, 160.

Fees. See under *ātivāhika*, *gulmadeya*, *taradeya*, *vaidharāṇa*, *vyājī*.

Ferry charges, 77, 86, 252. See also under *taradeya*.

Fick, Richard, quoted, 38n.

Finance, relation of, to Politics, 14; to Economics, 15.

Fines. See under *atyaya*, *daṇḍa*.

Five offences, 230, 233.

Fleet, J. F., quoted, 194, 210n, 214, 219, 245n.

Forbes, D., *Rās Mālā*, quoted, 62n, 257n.

Forced labour. See under *unpaid labour*, *viṣṭi*.

Forced loans, 135.

Forests, revenue from, 109-110.

G

Gambling dues, 91-92, 100-101, 258.

Gras, N.S.B., quoted, 81n.

Grassmann, quoted, 9n.

Gujarat, 215, 224, 238, 240-242, 255-259.

Gurjara-Pratihāras, 234.

Gwalior, 259.

H

- Hiring charges, 79, 92, 181.
 Huan-chang, Chen, quoted, 225, 226n, 228n.
 Hiuen Tsang, 224ff.
 Hopkins, E.W., quoted, 168n.

I

- Incomes, tax upon, 180. See also under *nāgarika*.
 Indraji, Bhagavānlāl, quoted, 231n, 233n.
 Internal taxes on commodities. See under *paṭṭanam*, *pravaṇikara*, *śulka*, *vaṇik*.
 Irrigation-dues, 33-34.

J

- Jones, Robert, *The Nature and First Principle of Taxation*, quoted, 272n.
 Johnston, E.H., quoted, 30n, 31n.
 Jolly, Julius, quoted, 13n, 121n, 168n, 212n, 219.

K

- Kāmarūpa, 196, 224, 247-249.
 Kashmir, 249-252.
 Kielhorn, F., quoted, 60n, 244.
 King's establishment, expenditure on, 154-157.
 King's farms, 187. See also under *sītā*.
 King's grain-share, 192, 218-219. See also under *bhāgabhogakara*, *meṃya*.
 Konow, Sten, quoted, 263n.
 Kṣatriya, right of, to treasure trove, 120.
 Kumayun, 239.

L

- Land, grant of, for public charities, 43; as remuneration for service, 44-45, 229, 260; as fee for learning, 229, 242; as military pension, 253.
 See also under *Brāhmaṇas*, *brahmadēya*, *devāgrahāra*, *vidyādhana*.
 Land-revenue, 27ff., 46ff., 54-55, 57-58, 66-67, 166-175, 247-248, 265-266, 266n. See also under *hiraṇya*, *king's grain-share*.
 Lawrence, *The Valley of Kashmir*, quoted, 60n, 62n, 97n, 251n.
 Lee, M.P., quoted, 225n, 226n.
 Leumann, E., quoted, 263n.
 Lévi, Sylvain, 231n, 233.

- Liquors, revenue from, 181-182, 192, 227-228. See also under *surā*.
 Lost and ownerless property, king's right to, 115-117.
 Lutz, *Public Finance*, quoted, 274n.
 Ludwig, quoted, 4n.

M

- Magadha, 230.
 Majumdar, N.G., *Inscriptions of Bengal*, quoted, 60n, 243n, 245 and n, 265n.
 Majumdar, R.C., quoted, 202n, 243n, 244n, 245, 266n, 267n.
 Malwa, 238, 259-274.
 Market dues, 235-236, 259. See also under *aṭṭapatibhāga*, *paṇyasaṁsthā*.
 M'Crindle, quoted, 180n, 181n.
 Measurement of land, 199, 239, 253.
 Megasthenes, quoted, 167, 171, 174, 176-177, 180-181, 183; compared with Kauṭilya, 170, 172, 174-180, 182-185; compared with Smṛtis, 177, 182.
 Merchants, tax upon. See under *kara*.
 Mines, revenue from, 104ff., 111, 248, 254, 261.
 Moreland, W. H., *The Agrarian System of Moslem India*, quoted, 275n, 287n.
 Muir, *Old Sanskrit Texts*, quoted, 6n.

N

- Nepal, 231.

O

- Official land-holding, 45.
 Oppressions upon villeges, 248.
 Orissa, 247.

P

- Pargiter, F.E., quoted 198n, 199n, 204n, 205n, 207.
 Pilgrims, tax on, 258.
 Plehn, *Introduction to Public Finance*, quoted, 23n.
 Plunder of foreign States, 123-124.
 Police-tax. See under *chauroddharana*.
 Prasad, Beni, *The State in Ancient India*, quoted, 61n, 191n, 219.
 Presents, earnings from, 38, 181. See also under *aupāyanika*.
 Property without heirs, lapse of, to the king, 112-114, 257. See also under *aputtrikādhana*.

Property without ownership, king's title to, 114-117.
 Prostitutes, tax on, 97.
 Punching-fee. See under *prätivedhanika*.
 Punjab, 239.

R

Ray, Sarat Chandra, *The Mundas and their country*, quoted, 32n.
 Registers, village, 49ff.
 Regular and irregular troops, exemption from, 188, 194, 216, 232, 238-240, 242-243, 245, 249.
 Revenues, classification of, 25-27.
 Revenue-free lands, 43-44, 65, 196.

S

Salt, tax on, 106-107, 188.
 Sarkar, J. N., quoted, 40n, 45n, 52n, 75n.
 Seditious persons, fleecing of, 130-131.
 Seligman, *Essays in Taxation*, quoted, 4n.
 Senart, quoted, 160n, 188-189.
 Service lands, 44ff.
 Smith, Vincent, quoted, 69n, 96n, 185n, 191, 192, 263n, 277n.
 State agricultural policy, 55-57, 67.
 State monopoly of mines, 107ff.; of salt, 188.
 State ownership of land, 169-170, 192, 226-227.
 Stein, Sir Aurel, quoted, 250n.
 Stein, Otto, quoted, 31n, 32n, 33, 46n, 171 and n, 172, 173n, 176, 178 and n, 180, 181n, 182n, 183, 184 and n.
 Sūdra, right of, to treasure-trove, 120.

T

Takakusu, quoted, 229n.
 Tariff policy, 72-73.
 Taxation, relation of, to protection, 17-18; principles of, 19ff.; maxims of, 22-23.
 Temples, plunder of, 129-130, 251-252.
 Thomas, F. W., quoted, 60n, 101n.
 Tod, James, quoted, 221n, 258n.
 Tolls, 177-179, 247. See also under *śulka*.
 Transit duties. See under *varttānī*.
 Treasure-trove, king's title to, 118-122.
 Treasures and deposits, king's share of, 195, 242, 254.

U

Unpaid labour, 39-40, 40n, 189, 216, 227, 232-233, 238, 240, 251.
Unrighteous persons, fleecing of, 123.
Usurers and money-lenders, tax on, 103.

V

Vaiśya, right of, to treasure trove, 120.
Villages, lump assessment upon. See under *pinḍakara*.
Vogel, J. Ph., quoted 60n, 202n, 214n, 243n.

W

Waste lands, 198-199, 201-205, 230.
Weber, *Indische Studien*, quoted, 6n.
Wells, D. A., *The Theory and Practice of Taxation*, quoted, 273n, 274n.
Whitney, W.D., quoted, 5n, 6n.
Wilson, H. H., *Glossary of Judicial and Revenue terms*, quoted, 210n, 237n.
Winternitz, M., quoted, 13 n.

Z

Zimmer, H., quoted, 4n, 5n.

By the same author

A HISTORY OF HINDU POLITICAL THEORIES

From the earliest times to the end of the seventeenth century A.D.

(2nd edition, Oxford University Press, 1927)

Select opinions on the 1st edition, 1923.

PROF. A. B. KEITH:—"It is unquestionably one of the most considerable contributions yet made to this interesting topic. The author's information is extensive, and what is more important in this matter, his judgment is normally extremely sound and his views are effectively and clearly expressed."

PROF. HERMANN JACOBI:—"The book certainly is a proof of the author's learning and extensive reading."

PROF. E. W. HOPKINS:—"Its comprehensive treatment is admirable, and it throws new light on the relation between Brahmanic and Buddhist theories of government."

DR. E. J. THOMAS:—"I am much struck by the soundness of the author's investigations and the excellent style in which he has expressed them."

PROF. JULIUS JOLLY:—"Some of the Sanskrit works used in it, such as the *Rājanītiratnākara* and the *Nītimayūkha*, have never been analysed before. The statements of Medhātithi, Aparārka and Vijñāneśvara in their celebrated commentaries are also very interesting. The old theory of Prof. Max Müller, that India has no place in the political history of the world, has been well refuted, likewise the opinion that there is no provision in the Hindu system for the interests of the State and the development of the race. The importance of the *Arthaśāstra* for the reconstruction of political science has been well brought out."

JOURNAL OF THE AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY:—"Our author brings out very sanely the fundamental differences between what have been called the Hindu theories of the 'social contract' and the 'divine right of kings' and their European analogs."

MIND:—"Dr. Ghoshal is one of the first to have opened up a branch of Indian speculation which has never been investigated by Western scholars His book is written in the clearest idiomatic English and in a well-ordered and emphatic style, with a commendable urbanity in dealing with opponents. It will undoubtedly be an aid, as he says, in furnishing the data from an Eastern point of view of a true science of Comparative Politics."

INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF ETHICS:—"His work is excellently written, and is a model of clear and sober judgment."

RIVISTA DEGLI STUDI ORIENTALI:—"Ghoshal dobbiamo uno studio soddisfacente, preciso e bene informato su una parte della letteratura e del pensiero dell' India, non ancora studiata come meritrebbe."

THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL REVIEW:—"The author is well trained in both Hindu and Occidental learning. He criticises sanely the comparisons that have been made between Western political theories and those of India; his attitude towards such comparisons is, generally speaking, reserved or even skeptical.....The book can be recommended to Western students of political theory as a sane interpretation, from the historical and comparative standpoint, of what the ancient Hindus accomplished in that field."

THE SPECTATOR:—".....commendably fresh and stimulating. The author is familiar with Western political thought as well as with the teaching of the Sanskrit classics, and his comparisons between the two—especially as regards kingship—are of special interest."

THE NEW STATESMAN:—"Professor Ghoshal draws an interesting parallel between the dominant social theory and the European conception of the Social Contract. His full exposition of Kauṭilya's system (circa 300 B.C.) is an excellent piece of work."

Select opinions on the 2nd edition.

PROF. M. WINTERNITZ IN INDOLOGICA PRAGENSIA:—"I consider the work a most valuable contribution to the history of political theories in Ancient India."

DEUTSCHE LITERATURZEITUNG:—"Ghoshal legt hier die zweite Ausgabe seines zuerst im Jahr 1923 erschienenen Buches vor, ein gründliches, sachkundiges, besonnenes und fesselndes Werk, hoch erfreulich im ganzen und in seinen Gliedern.Aber einerseits bietet Gh. eine wirklich vorzügliche, sowohl belehrende wie anregende Behandlung des Stoffs und sodann auch manches, was man meines Wissens anderwärts nicht findet.....Eins der besten unter den vielen seit der Wiederauffindung des Kauṭilyatextes veröffentlichten Werke über altindische Politik und in seiner ganz geschichtlich gerichteten Eigenart wohl ohne Nebenbuhler."

THE STATESMAN (CALCUTTA):—"It forms a well-arranged, well-balanced and comprehensive review of the rise, growth and decline of the political thought of the Hindus from the Vedic times to the last phase, which extended almost up to the beginning of British Rule in India."

